H STUDY OF CASTE

BY

P. LAKSHMI NARASU

Author of "The Essence of Buddhism"

MADRAS

K. V. RAGHAVULU, PUBLISHER, 367, Mint Street.

Printed by V. RAMASWAMY SASTRULU & SONS at the "VAVILLA" PRESS, MADRAS—1932.

All Rights Reserved by th* Author.

To

SIR PITTI THY AG A ROY A

as

an expression

of

friendship and gratitude.

FOREWORD.

This book is based on arfcioles origiDally contributed to a weekly of Madras devoted to social reform. At the time of their appearance a wish was expressed that they might be given a more permanent form by elaboration into a book. In fulfilment of this wish I have revised those articles and enlarged them with much additional matter. The book makes no pretentions either to erudition or to originality. Though I have not given references, I have laid under contribution much of the literature bearing on the subject of caste. The book is addressed not to savants, but solely to such mea of common sense as have been drawn to consider the question of caste. He who fights social intolerance, slavery and injustice need offer neither substitute nor constructive theory. Caste is a crippli'jg disease. The physicians duty is to guard against diseasb or destroy it. Yet no one considers the work of the physician as negative. The attainment of liberty and justice has always been a negative process. Without rebelling against social institutions and destroying custom there can never be the tree exercise of liberty and justice. A physician can, however, be of no use where there is no vitality. Similarly argument, philosophy, ethics, religion, legislation will not avail to transform a people who have not developed the will to live. Truth and freedom are the motive forces for the highest development of moral health, and ou truth, virtue and knowledge depend all progress. Politicians, swayed by exaggerated creature comforts, fight for wealth, power and success, but give no thought to the psychological revolution so necessary for the progress of India. I have taken my stand on truth, unbound by convention an3 untrammelled by anxiety. I have nowhere attempted to tickle vanity or excite sentiment, nor have I resorted to compromise and equivocation. I have everywhere stated plain facts in a plain manner, but I mean no affront to any body. It is not my desire to force progress on those who are unwilling to bear it, but I hope to render aid to those whom expertenoe ha3 taught the necessity of forging a new life. The desire ia abroad that India should become self-governing and a real political name instead of being a mere-geographical expression. If India is to evolve out of itself a democratic form of government, a government of the people by the people for the people, a political consciousness must be roused by a struggle to raise all towards the highest degree of possible culture. In all should spriog up a sense of shame for every form of slavery, whether political or spiritual. Caste Organization crushes the individual under-its dead weight and hinders progress by killing all consciousness of liberty. Should my book serve to convince a few of its readers of the impossibility of creating a new people, united and cultured, without the abolition of caste and the uprootal of all religion whose life-blood is caste, it will have attained its end. 1 shall close with expressing my thanks to all who have rendered help in the preparation and publication of this book.

367, Mint Street, Madras.

P. L. NARASU.

2nd January, 1922.

CONTENTS.

~ PAGE SOBJECT

- 1. Is caste universal? Main features of caste. Hereditai7 specialization.
- 2. Hierarchical organization. Mutual repulsion.
- Parallels of caste in history. Social organization in the Middle Ages.
- 4. Social organization in classical antiquity. Social organization in Egyptian civilization.
- 4-5. Social evolution in China.
- 6-7 Caste in India
- •8. Manu's four castes.
- . 9. Origin of the caste system in India.
- »io. Caste and the trade guilds.
- '11. Origin of caste distinctions in the ancient Aryan family.
- '12. Exclusiveness of primitive peoples a possible cause of caste.
- -13. Brahminical sway began with the advent of Soma-Haoma priests.
- •14, J5rahmin superiority an essential principle in Hindu organization.
- .15-16. How did the Brahmin attain his position?
- 17. The Rigveda, the poetry of a caste destined for an aristocratic cult.
- •18. The purpose of sacrifice.
- 19. Their priestly of Sce made the Brahmins divine.
- 20. Sacrifice turned into a magic cult.
- 21. From the Vedic period religion in India moves in an atmosphere of magic.
- 22. The Brahmins and the nobility.
- 23. Belief in the efficacy of magic ia the source of asceticism.

PAGE ScBJEq;

- The Upanishads, the source of orthodox religious movements in India.
- TheKshatriya caste is responsible for the theory of Karma.
- The Brahmins were not eager to accept the progressive ideas of the Kshatriyas.
- Buddhism and its founder, Gautama Sakyamuni, a Kshatriya
- 28-30. B,uddha declares caste distinctions futile.
- 31. Buddhaa's intellectual and ethical light shines on all-Caste distinctions observed by the Buddhist laity have no religious significance.
- 32. Brahmins and the teachings of Buddha.
- 33. The great Buddhist emperor Asoka.
- 34-35. The moral teaching s of Asoka.
- 36. Asoka dispenses with Brahminio aid.
- 37. After Asoka's death Brahminism rises again.
- 38. The code of Manu declares the Brahmin to be divine.
- 39. Buddhism during the Pushyamitra dynasty.
- 39-40. The second stage of the development of the Mahabharata falls into this period.
- 41. The end of the Pushyamitra dynasty.
- 42. Buddhism assumes a new form after the Yue-chi conquest of India.
- 43. Asvagosha, its first expounder.
- 44-45. His attack on caste in the Vajrasuchi,
- 46. The end of the reign of Kanishka.
- 47. Buddhism during the time of his suoce-sors. Gupta emperors tolerant towards Buddhism.
- 48. The Mahabhirata in its present form the result of a revision by Brahmins at the Gupta court.
- 49-50. Inilueuce of Buddha's teachings on the popilar mind. The Brahmins put forward a new Kshatriya teacher.
- 51. Krishna, an incarnation of God, serves to take the place of the Buddha•
- 52. The Bhagavadgita receives the status of an Upanishad.
- 53. Caste in the Bhagavadgita.
- 54. Defence of killing in the Bhagavadgita calls to mind Yuan Chuang's account of Kurukshetra in the Styuki.

PAGE SOBJECT

- •55. Philosophical Absolutism and caste.
- 56-57. Philosophical Absolutism criticised.
- 58. The theory of three gunas in the Gita.
- 59. Kumarila s attack on Buddha,
- 60. The Sankaravijaya on Buddhismi
- 61. The Brahmin's effort to maintain his supremacy.
- **62.** Brahminism and the partiality for vegetarian diet. Buddhism during, the time of King Harsha.
- 63. Buddhism under the Sena kings.
- 64. Buddhism under Brahminic sway.
- 65. Hinduism a proselytin' religion.
- '66. Child marriage a result of the caste system.
- 67. ©usion of Buddhism and Brahminism.
- **68-70.** Methods employed to maintain the caste system.
- 70. Samkara.
- 71. Buddhism in South India.
- 72. Division of Hindu Society into Brahmin and non-Brahmin classes.
- 74. The nature and development of religion.
- •75. Caste the common feature of Hindu religions.
- 76. Buddhist influence on other religious teachers.
- 77. The Lingayat sect and reform. Saivism and Buddhism.
- 78. Bhaktimarga in Vaishnavite cults.
- 79. The earliest Vaishnavite sect.
- 80. Jainism and Buddhism.
- **81.** Art a tangible way in which religion shows its influence on civilization.
- 82. Caste in Vaishnavism. Ramanuja and caste.
- •83. Caste in the teaching and life of Ramananda.
- •85. Hinduism during the Mohamedan conquest-
- 86 The earliest Moslem invaders waged war against 'Buddhism and 1 brahminism.
- 87. The contact of the monotheism of Islam with Vaishna-
- **88.** Husain Shah's attempt to reconcile the religious differences of the Hindu and Mussulman communities.
- 89. Akbar's attitude towards Hinduism.
- 90-91. Chaitanya and caste.
- 92-93- Buddhism and the Vaishnavite movement in Bengal.
- 94. The Mohamedan conquest of Bengal.

vi

PAGE SCBJECT

- .95. Aurangazib threatens Hinduism.
- 96. Sivajee the patron of Hinduism.
- .97. Caste among the Mohamedans of Upper India.
- .98-99. Christianity and caste distinctions.
- 100. Earn Mohan Roy and the Brahma Samaj.
- 101. The development of the Brahma Samaj under various leaders.
- 102. The Arya Samaj.
- The Vedanta of Sri Ramakrishna and Swami Vivekananda.
- 106. Theosophie Hinduism.
- 106. The British administration and caste.
- 108. Education under the British administration.
- IDS. National education.
- '111. NationaHsts and the caste system.
- •112. The influence of the caste system on the country's political life.
- •113. The influence of the caste system on the country's intellectual life.
- •114. Attempted defence of caste on scientific grounds.
- •115. The classification of mankind into races.
- '117. Purity of blood a myth.
- "118. Caste and eugenics.
- •120. Men are fundamentally alike and therefore equal.
- •121. This equality implies equality of opportunity.
- •122. Self-development must be open to all.
- •123. The fallacy of the theory of the four Varnas demonstrated on physiological and sociological grounds.
- '124. Brahminic philosophy is based on the belief in soul and Karma.
- •126. The caste system has not solved the problem between capital and labour.
- '127. The system of castes and Plato's Republic.
- •128. The origin of caste is not economic but mystic and OCQUIt.

r

- '130. Mami on the supremacy of Brahmins.
- •131. Caste the mainstay of the Hindu religion.
- -132. The system of castes a part of the Hindu conception of the Universe.
- 133. The Hindu doctrine of Karma.

PAGE SUBJECT

- 13i, The doctrine of Karma fails to separate the human from the animal kingdom.
- 185. The doctrine of transmigration and the belief in a soul.
- 16- Belief in a soul has no basis in modern science.
- 138. The phenomenon of life.
- 139. The thinking soul ("Atman) and the principle of life (Prana).
- 140. How people come by their various beliefs.
- 149. Personality a coraponnd of body and mind.
- 143. Death does not end all.
- 144. Man a component of the community of human beings.
- 146. The negation of a soul leads to the denial of a creating deus extra mundum.
- 146.147. The assumption of a Providence is not a scientific hypothesis.
- 1*9. Man is not evil by nature.
- 149. Every system of morality is a body of imperfect social generalizations.
- 150-151. Man's baser emotions spring from the need of food and interests connected with reproduction.
- 152. Civilization is the result of mutual aid and utility.
- 153-154. The denial of soul and God does not imply a denial of all religion.
- 165-153. Progress in religion consists in a reconciliation between religion and science.
- 157. Progress comprises tendencies and movements that make for a better society.
- 158. The spirit of nationality is no better than the spirit of caste.
- 159. The consciousness of the unity of all mankind makes for beautiful and happy lives.

ERRATA.

PAGE	LINK	BEAD	FOR
4	8	hereditary	hereditory
11	31	ancient	ancient
i6	4	Veda 8	vedas
i6	33	diminution	diminition
31	26	occasion	oocassion
32	37	Saddharma	Saddharna
36	19	right way	rightway,
42	31	Sanskrit	Sanscrit
46	12	varna	vama
46	20	conformation	confirmation
47	24	dealings	deelings
47	30	abhorrent	abhonent
48	12	underwent	under went
50	31	Panini	Paunini
53	18	serenity	serenity
53	27.	perfection	prefeotion
56	29	philosophies	philosophies
57	28	tAt tvam asi	tatvamasit
59	28	Komarila	Kamarila
64	18	shepherd	shephered
66	22	Earhi	Eashi
72	1	royal	Royal
78	28	poisonous	poisonouss
83	43	sticklers	stcklera
90	16	were	was
95	6	conceal	canceal
98	6	number	member
103	27	Philippines	Phillipines
127	42	pursuit of	pursuitof
143	40	nor	not
144	43	individual	ihvidual
157	18	Weltgeschichte	Weltgeschicte
159	1	the	ths
159	1	by	hy

A STUDY OF CASTE

•'The thing we in India have got to think of is this—to remove those social customs and ideals which have generated a want of self-respect and a complete dependence on those above us—a state of affairs which has been brought about entirely by the domination in India of the caste system, and the blind and lazy habit of relying upon the authority of traditions that are incongruous anachronisms in the present age Rabindranath Tagore.

It has been rightly said that the highest ideal of sociology lies in the amelioration of social pathology. To this end must therefore be subordinated all antiquarianism and historical investigation. An investigation into the nature and basis of the rule of caste in India cannot but prove a valuable factor for progress. This then is my apology for this study.

Naturally there are some preliminary questions which need to be first considered. Is caste a universal phenomencn common to all civilizations, or is it a phenomenon peculiar to India? What is its relation to similar social divisions, such as guild, clan, class? Some regard the division into castes as common to the majority of ancient nations. In all ancient societies we observe ethnic differences, political parties, professional specializations. Normal to all societies is the antipathy between the patrician and the plebeian, the landlord and the tenant, the rich and the poor. The repugnance of the Brahmin for the Pariah is not different in kind from the repugnance of the master for his scavenger. On the other hand, others emphasise that caste is a thing unique in the history of the world, being essentially a Hindu institution. To be able to decide between these two views we should first define clearly what caste is.

The feature of caste that siirikes even the most superficial observer is hereditary specialization. The son of a soldier is a soldier, the son of a blacksmith is a blacksmith, the son of a scavenger is a scavenger. The work a man does is not determined by his aptitude or desire hut by his descent. Family and profession are coupled. The son can choose only the profession of the father. It is not mlj the

right but also the duty of a son to follow the avocatioa of his father. This spirit prevails in a society suljjeat to caste.

Coupled with the hereditary division of labour is the inequality of rights and privileges attached to the various castes. Every caste monopolizes not only certain professions but also certain privileges. By the very fact of one's birth one is exempted from taxes, while another is taxed heavily. In a court of law jhe former is worth a hundred mohurs, while the latter is worth only ten. The dress which one wears is entirely forbidden to the other. The rank of the group to which one belongs by birth determines one's personal status for good. Inequalities and special privileges form the second feature of caste.

Mutual repulsion between the different groups into which a society subject to caste is divided is a third feature of caste. A man who is under the sway of caste dare not seek a wife outside his traditional circle; he refuses food prepared by other than his congeners and views the contact of strangers as impure and degrading. Wherever caste wields influence, we observe the horror of misalliance, the fear of impur, contacts, the mutual exclusiveness between the several groups into which society is divided.

Mutual repulsion, hierarchical organization and hereditary specialization are the three main characteristics of caste. Caste rules a society, if it is divided into a large number of groups, mutually exclusive, hereditarily specialized and hierarchically organised, and it it does not tolerate in principle the commingling of blood, the acquisition of rank and the change of profession.

Guided by this definition of caste we may look through history for examples in which these tendencies characteristic of caste are wholly or partially found. For example, contemporary occidental civilization reveals certain traces of the spirit of oaste. The horror of misalliances and the fear of impure contacts are still noticeable. The idea of "equality of birth" surviving in European royalty is surely that of a caste conception. Alliances between members of different social spheres are not very common. Different classes of the population of a country do not freely mix with one another. Certain schools are frequented only by certain classes of the community. These distinctions undoutedly correspond in a large measure to the grades of a hierarchy. Though the laws may not avow the existence of olaaaes.

tbe manners of the people prove their existence. Bat no one will contend that caste dominates European civilization. .\U judicial, political and economic reforms of recent times are found **even** on a superficial examination to be the results of the dominance of the idea of equality. Law no longer hallows such modes of life as remind us of caste Where the tendencies characteristic of caste still subsist, they are merely survivals.

When we turn to the Middle Ages, the divisions of societj' are more and more marked Between the different froups the distances ; ire more marked not only by manners, ut also by laws, and the professions are more frequently monopolised by families. Yet the social organization of the Middle Ages does not correspond to the precise definition of caste that has been given above. The diiference between caste and the class division of the Middle Ages comes out clearly, when we examine the social characteristics of the Catholic clergy and the feudal lords who then held sway. If the idea of heredity is essential to caste, the Catholic clergy cannot constitute a caste, because the clergy are all ceUbates. By their very mode of recruitment the clergy indirectly help ideas which are subversive of those underlying oxabe. A si iva may become a pope and the son of a commoner may become greater than a king. A great distance likewise separates feudal government from caste rule. The fundamental principle of the former is that "the condition of the land determines the man," a principle quite contrary to that of caste, in which one's status is determined by one's birth. Conquest or contract may render one the possessor of a land, and this will raise one in the social scale. The possessor of many fiefs may be the vassal of some and the lord of others, which would mike it difficult to define clearly his social rank. Such a system cannot in strictness be regarded as a hierarchy. Again, a feudal lord lived on his lauds and governed on his own account a oerbaia number of men who depended only on him. The feudal system is therefore characterized more by a coUectioa of individual despotisms than by a superposition of different groups. It lends itself to individualism, but does not cut up society, as caste does, into small groups which repel one another

In clftssicil antiquity the city was for a long time marked by a strict hierarchy. Leaving aside slaves, religious »

legal and political inequalities separated the plebeian from the patrician- Hereditary specialization was not unknown. In Greek history we often meet with families of physicians or families of priests. The very names of the four Ionian tribes at Athens are the names of professions. The cult of ancestors stood in the way «f the several groups forming the city mixing together. Yet it was the mission of the ancient city to Bnrmount this tendency. Hereditory specialization was an exception rather than the rule. Hierarchical organization did not develop into the superposition of mutually repelling groups. In fact, so long as the city remained a collection of gens, the inferiors did not form separate groups; slaves or dependants belonged to the family and formed part of one corporate body. Later when an independent common people came into being, they imposed on the city new groupiuga which displaced the old divisions and forced the citizens to mix. United into demes, the classes, following their fortunes or armamentS: could not remain grouped into clans. Gradually the equality of rights and privileges was won. The work of reformers helped to remove the traces left by the primitive divisions. Thus, even in antiquity, occidental civilization •was opposed to the spirit of caste.

Older than classical civilization is Egyptian civilization. Not infrequently it is asserted that Egyptian civilization represented a type subject to caste regime, Herodotus tells us that Egyptians were divided into seven gens: priests, warriors, cowherds, swineherds, roerchants, interpreters and pilots. Only the priests and warriors enjoyed marks of distinction; special lands were reserved for them, and they were exempted from all taxes. When a priest died, his place was taken by his son. Warriors alone could follow the profession of arms, which passed from father to son. Diodorus represents this hereditary specialization not only as a custom but as a practice enforced hj laws. At first sight these ancient writers seem to be confirmed by modern researches. The trilingual inscription on the Kosetta stone speaks of sacred, military and royal lands. Some documents testify to certain privileges specially reserved for the military and Bacerdotal classes. On the other hand, a number of inscriptions prove that there were dynasties belonging to all strata of society. Division of labour does not seem to have been clearly defined. Sacerdotal, military and civil functions did not exclude each other. Specialization was not therefore

absolute. The Egyptian tendency was rather to accumulatathan to separate employments. There is positive proof that no man was confined for life to the profession of his father. The example of the son of a poor scribe rising to be the primate of the Western Gate shows that the social hierarchy was not petrified. Pharoah could, by granting lands or revenues, create nobles. Intermarriage was the rule, except between the swine-herds and the other classes. There is nothing which enables us to assert that the spirit of division and mutual repulsion, so characteristic of caste, dominated Egyptian society. If a system of prohibitions isolated for a long time its elementary groups, the administrative organization tended to efface the spontaneous divisions of the population. The Nile necessitated a unity, a common culture, which removed the mutual repugnance between the classes or tribes. Whatever might be the reason, the Egyptian civilization did not develop the invincible resistance to unification which cbaracterises caste regime. If the power of democracy resisted the development of caste in European civilization, so did a powerful monarchy hinder the development of caste in Egyptian civilization.

In China social evolution took place on lines roughly parallel to those elsewhere. The traditional Chinese social system recognised four main classes below the priestemperor. The Chinese emperor, the "son of Heaven," was himself a high priest, his chief duty being sacrificial. It is not without struggle that the ruler attained this position by breaking up tradition. The leading class consists of the literate men of China, but it is not a caste in the Indian sense. Unlike the Brahmins the mandarins, the name by which tha literate class is known, are not born, but they become so by education. Members of all classes of the community can become mandarins by education and examination. The Chinese mandarin is the product of hard mental work. The son of a mandarin has no prescriptive right to succeed his father. It has been the custom in China from the earlest times to divide one's landed property among all the sons. There has therefore never been in China great landlords, renting their land to tennants. Soldiers and labourers have been recruited from the impecunious masses of the town population owning scarcely any property at all. The life of a soldier is despised in China. The complexities of the written language of China enabled the mandarinate to prevail, but the mandarins do not form a caste.

Now when we turn to investigate the question of caste in India, we tread on different ground. We find the three essentials of caste in full swing. Nowhere has the suppresssion of individuality and hereditary specialization been pushed so far as in India. Though the number of professions may not be as large as in any advanced country of modern Europe, yet each grand profession is divided into a number of subdivisions, which in reality correspond to no professional distinction. In the majority of cases what distinguishes one caste from its congeners is that it abstains from certain methods, does not utihze the same materials, or does not produce the same articles. For example: fishermen are divided into different castes according to the appliances they employ, or according to the fish they catch; potters are divided into two castes according as they work standing and make large pots, or turn the wheel sitting and make small pots. Different castes of domestic servants have each their proper employment, and a servant of one caste emphatically declines to do the work of another caste. From top to toe plurality of functions is interdicted in principle in Hindu society. The work one has to do is assigned once for all by his descent. No one has the right to change his function. Hereditary specialization is the rule and it has been so from a remote past. But we should also note that this system of hereditary specialization has much greater flexibility than appears at first sight. For example, all kinds oi: proiessions have been open to the Brahmins at all times. Far from confining themselves to the study of the sacred books they have acted as kings, soldiers, merchants, cooks, agriculturists and labourers. Even their superiority has opened out to them more possibilities than to common mortals. Manu declares that a Brahmin should always be regarded as a great divinity, --whatever may be the profession to which he may be devoted." The higher the caste the more numerous the occupations open to it. Following the example of the Brahmins the members of the other castes have given up in some cases the occupations enjoined for them in the codes and taken to other professions. In many cases the change of profession is regarded legally as illicit and involves a social degradation. A peculiarity of the flexibility in relation to hereditary specialization is that it is collective rather than individual. No indi-vidual is allowed to renounce the profession of his father to satisfy his own natural aptitude^

and inclination. It is rather groups that detach themselves from the whole to take to new professions, but within each group the rule is that the son follows the profession of his father. The individual who ventures to transgress this rule is *ipso facto* a rebel and an outcaste. The fact that, when a group changes its profession, it seeks to justify the change by alegend which exculpates it from the censure of public opinion, indicates that to the conscience of the Hindu attachment to the profession of the ancestors appeals as a duty, from which he ought not to swerve except for sacred reasons.

Passing from hereditary specialization to hierarchical organization, nowwhere do we observe such marked distinctions as in Hindu society. The castes and their subdivisions are numberless. Above all is the Brahmin, although the prestige of a Brahmin maj' not be the same in all conditions. "A Brahmin", says Manu, 'be he ignorant or lep.rned, is a great divinity." The absolute superiority of the Brahmin is as uncontested as the absolute inferiority of the Pariah. Between these two extremes are comprehended the innumerable castes, each with its rank and prerogatives. The rank of a caste is determined by such considerations as purity of blood, fidelity to the ancestral profession, abstention from interdicted foods and drinks. The sacred texts also define with almost mathematical precision the differences tetween the several castes. But in practice the criterion which settles the dignity of a caste is the esteem in which the Brahmin holds it, that is. the kind of relationship as regards receiving gifts, food and drink from its members by those of the Brahmin cnste lb is the conformity with the Brahminic ideas that confers rank. In the eyes of the orthodox Hindu any other caste than his own is in a sense impure. In South India when a Brahmin enters a Parachery water mixed with cowdung is sprinkled after he leaves it, just as they do after a corpse is removed from a Hindu home. No wonder that between the several castes into which Hindu society is split up there is mutual repulsion.

This sentiment of repulsion is exhibited specially in the matter of commensality and marriage. Therefore the fear of pollution is the basis of the sentiment of repulsion. The feai' of pollution drives the Hindu to isolate himself for eating. A proverb says: -For three Kanouj Brahmins thirty fires are needed," and another says: "For a dozen Rajputs thirteen kitchens are needed." These scruples are observed not only

by the high castes but also by all from top to bottom. Marriage outside one's caste is rigorously interdicted. Caste is rigidly endogamoas, although it seems to be coupled with internal exogamy. This endogamous character isolates the castes and tends to shut them out for ever from one another. Although anthropologists have shown that in spite of this restriction the mixtures are numerous, yet in the eyes of the Hindu a pure marriage is only one contracted between the members of the same caste. A marriage outside caste entails a greater degradation than a change of occupation. Hence the fissiparous tendency may be considered to be inherent in Hindu society.

Though Manu is quoted as saying that there are only four castes and that there is no fifth, this chaturvania has never been more than an ideal. The Jataka tales, ascribed to Gautama Sakyamuni of the seventh century B. G. already refer to a multiplicty of castes. Jolly quotes from Sanskrit literature more than forty names of jatts, which bear no correspondence to the subdivisions of the primitive four varnas. It is difficult to determine in the existing castes the actual descendants of the four traditional castes: Brahmins who devote themselves only to study and sacrifice, Kshatriyas who only fight, Vaisyas who only trade, and Sudras who only serve others. The castes fall into two great divisions, the pure and the impure. A great gulf separates the pure from the impure But the impure castes also have many divisions of social rank, among whom there is much emulation; each group, though desnised by the Brahmin.aspires to be more respectable than its neighbour. Even the lowest take a pride in their caste and are exclusive. No better proof is needed of the existence of a mutual repulsion between the constituent parts of Hindu society.

Caste, as represented by one or the other of its three characteristics, made its appearance in all civilizations. In most countries the transmission of profession from father to son was common at one time or other. We may notice a parallel between the sacerdotal class of Levites among the Hebrews and the Brahmins of India. In the most unified peoples avowed even to democracy there have been in their primitive stages divisions which naturally excluded one another. Thus the elements of comparison between the caste system of India and the civilizations of other countries are not lacking. But it ia in the Hindu caste system that we find the synthesis of the

elements found everywhere, the completion of the trace* visible everywhere, the unique blossoming of universal tendencies. India may therefore be righty characterised as tha special land in which caste rules in all its vigour and bloom. Bharatavarsha, the land of the black antelope, is the special preserve of the system of castes.

What then are the origins of this institution, which exists only in India? At this distance of time it may not ba possible to say precisely how the system of castes originated. Yet by way of elimination we may discover what causes have not played a part. At the very commencement we may reject the theory that ascribes the origin of castes to the cunning policy of ambitious priests, who modelled Hindu society wholly to their advantage. The impartial study of institutions has shown that few of them are based on mere charlatanry. The complex and long-standing character of the system of castes makes it improbable that the system could have been a deliberate invention. A theory, closely akin but equally preposterous, is the one that ascribes the design of the casta system to Brahminism for the purpose of developing satvic qualities whose acquisition is posited as the soul of all progress. To make the organisation of Hindu society depend solely on the will of the Brahmins would be to exaggerate the part played by voluntary creation in the growth of human society, although it must ba granted that casta has served as a bulwork to preserve much of the Brahmin's heritage from decay and dissolution.

Attempts have been made to liken the Hindu castes to the trade-guilds of medieval Europe. Prom the remotest antiquity professional differences have exerted great influence on the life of the Hindu. The utility and the dignity of the occupation followed by a caste is determinative of its rank. Each caste or group of castes may be viewed as corresponding to a step of progress by which man Increases hia sway over things. May not therefore the Hindu hierarchy respond in a general way to the phases of industrial evolution? The pressure of industry gives rise to the multiplicity of professions and brings almut the growth of corporations as a consequence. Why should not Hindu corporations have responded to the same needs as the Germanic corporations? Castes might therefore be regarded as petrified guilds. Now, we could speak of a caste as a guild only if to every different profession corresponded a different caste and vice versa.

But the members of one and the same caste often follow different professions. Many castes are named not only cases a caste has no relation to industrial life. The worshippers of the same saint or the followers of the same prophet (such as Kabirpanthis and Dadupanthis) form a closed group. In such cases the caste is born of a sect and not of a professional corporation. In some respects there is a resemblance between the guilds of the Middle Ages and the Hindu castes. The guilds of the Middle Ages were not wholly industrial or economical corporations. Each guild formed a fraternity with its common chest for mutual help, its chapel, its feasts, its cult, its jurisdiction. It exercised supervision not only on the qualities of the goods produced by its members but also on the conduct of the latter. A guild formed, ss it were, a large family, and it was in relation to its function as a family that it instituted its cult, its sacrifices, its common repast, its vault. It is here we find the spirit of the gens in the professional guilds, and this is the feature that makes a medieval guild resemble a caste. But in these guilds are found none of the thre.e features peculiar to caste The guilds never forbade a man to marry outside bis own guild, nor did they object to take apprentices from other guilds or from the outside community. Members of different guilds ate together and in the assertion and defence of their common interests the various guilds joined together, but the tendency of ciste in to split up into subdivision? or a mutually exchisive character. Membership in a guild was open to all workers in a certain trade, and every man was Jree to apprentice his son to a trade different from liis own. Though oases of this kind were not general, because oi'al tradition was the only mode of conserving ideas and practices and it was inevitable that the father should transmit to liis son the secret of his profession, yet they ocurred with sufficient frequency to show that occupation was not in the days of the guilds determined by caste and that caste divisions were not maintained by professional differences. Further, the guilds did much to improve the industries they represented, but can we say that caste has been favourable to the development of the arts and industries of the Hind-is Caste organization may be utilized for the various purposes for which a puild might serve. But to assert that caste organization ia to the Hindu, his club, his

trade union, bis benefit soolety, bis philanthropic society and so forth is more a fancy than a fact. If, as has been contended, the natural history of industry could furnish the kei' to the hierarchical organization of Hindu society, how should we account for the positfon of the Brahmin at the summit of the whole edifice? Do the methods of incantation and sacrifice employed by the Brahmin correspond to any advanced phase of industrial progress? The prestige of the Brahmin may not be measurable by materialistic criteria; but only material considerations have weight, when any matter is examined from an industrial and economic standpoint. If hereditary specialization appeals to the soul of the Hindu as an obligatory duty, we must look for its reason not in economic tendencies but in the idea of to/ioo so common among primitive peoples and in the theocracy at the basis of the system of castes. Just as certain objects are taboo for certain families, so are certain professions interdicted to some and prescribed for others. A religious idea sways the industrial organization of Hindu society.

The mutual repulsion between tlie several castes has led some indologists to look for the origin of caste in the ancient Aryan family. The ancient Aryan family was essentially a religious association bringing together for the same cult around a common hearth the gens of the same blood. The desire for the continuity and purity of the cult was the source of man}' prescriptions which were laid down for its members. For example, the repast, which was the product of the sacred fire, was the external sign of the unity of the family; hence the interdiction in primitive society of partaking the repast of a stranger. Similarly, in the laws relating to marriage, religious scruples swayed in the aucient family organizations. It was in the name of sacred law that the patrician of pure race remained faithful to his ancient religion avoiding alliance with the impure plebeians of mixed origin, destitute of family rites. Between the castes of India similar barriers exist as regards eating and marriage. May not also the prescriptions and prohibitions relating to connubium and commensality in Hindu society be due to the religious conceptions peculiar to the .\rans '? May not caste be a lineal descendant of the Aryan family? Many facts are opposed to this view of the origin of caste. The beliefs and practices which are regarded as peculiar to the Arj'ans are found also among other peoples. Fear of impurity of blood

and scruples about touch are common to almost all primitive peoples. The Semites also had special prescriptions and prohibitions about commensality and connubium. The sacrificial repast among the Semites was essentially a least of relatives. The sacred repast united the faithful not only to God but also to one another; it gave to them the same flesh and made the same blood flow in them. The prescriptions of caste as regards repast may be traced to ideas common to all primitive peoples but that does not prove an Aryan basis. Nor is the endogamy which separates the Hindu castes from one another peculiar only to the tribes of the Aryan race. If the rules of caste agree largely with the old laws relating to gms. on one important point there is an essential difference. The members of a gens are interdicted from marrying among one another but caste prescribes this. The former is as rigorously exogamic as the latter is endogamic. The spirit of caste can not thereiore be said to have originated from the family. Further, forms of marriage which appear most opposed to endogamic practices, such as marriage by capture, are in reality reconcilable with endogamy. Before contracting marriage the captured woman is first adapted into the family. Endogamy appears therefore much more general than was believed at first. Like the Hindu castes many tribes of very different races are endogamous, while their sections are exogamous. Hence the scruples of the Hindu concerning marriage do not necessarily prove the Aryan descent of the Hindu caste. All that we can say is that the spir:t common to all primitive societies which exclude one another owing to religious scruples has survived to the present day in the castes of India.

It is not improbable that the family exclusiveness characteristic of primitive peoples lies at the bottom of the mutual repulsion observed between the various Hindu castes. The emigrants who called themselves --Aryas" probably settled at firet in the Iranian plateau. A comparison of the language oi the Veda with that of the Iranian Avesta proves that these languages are dialects of one and the same older language. Entire passages of the Veda may ba converted into good specimens of the Avesta by mere phonetic modifications. The most striking characteristics of the period when the ancestors of the Iranians and the Vedic Aryans lived together appear to be the development of the worship of fire (agni) combined with magic and the introduction of

the soma drink at sacrifices. The ritual of Soma-Haoma which came into vogue gave birth to a clergy of its own. By a slow progress the members of certain clans, better provided than ethers with technical knowledge in rites and formulas, became the masters of the sacrificial altar and the recognised intermediaries between gods and men. Just as among the ancient Eomans the pontifices became powerful and inflnential owing to their knowledge of all the details of sacrificial ceremonies, so did also the masters of the sacrificial altar among the ancestors of the Vedic Aryans and the ancient Iranians form themselves into a special priestly class. The gradual formation oi a priestly class and the respect it showed to the various professions followed by the members of the community gradually led up to the division of society into classes. The existence of classes in ancient Indo-Iranian society may be surmised from the existence of the four pishtras among the ancient Iranians, namely, the Athravas or priests, the Rathaestas or warriors, the Vastriyas-Fshoyants, or chiefs of familliea, and the Huites or manual labourers. The four pishtras of the Avesta represent only classes and not castes in the Hindu sense of the word. The reformation of Zoroaster appears to have wiped out any differences that might have existed between the various classes.

A companj' of the more adventurous spirits among the Athravas appears to have set out to secure for themselves new domains among the neighbouring Dravidians. These Dravidians were not a primitive people, but tilled the ground, worked in metals, traded v?ith foreign countries, possessed forts and chariots. They had among them aristocracy and serfs. The former held all the land and possessed all the wealth of the country. The latter cultivated the land for their masters, but did not hold it themselves. The Aryan immigrants came among the Dravidians as astrologers and sorcerers carrying with them their Indra-Agni cult, but they seem to have brought witn them few women or none at all. Thej- influenced the elite among the darker Dravidians, established themselves as priests and took women according to their needs. They found themselves cut off from their original stock partly by the distance and partly by the alliances they had contracted. By marrying women from the Dravidians they had to some extent modified their original type, but a certain pride ot blood remained in them. When they

had bred females eaough to serve their purposes and to establish a distinct *jm connuhii*, they closed their ranks to further intermixture oi blood. When they did this, they became a caste like the castes of the present day. The old term for caste is varna, colour, which implies purity of descent, and it is the lear oi the Aryans being merged in the Dravidians as an iudiatingnishable mass that led to the proscribing of exogamy. According to Fick marriages between members of the same family were ox common oecarrenco in the ancient period. -The union oi men and women descended from the same ancestor and of blood relations in the third and fourth degrees is represented as a general practice." As the immigrants only took women bat did not give them, complete amalgamation with the older inhabitants did not take place. It is not unlikely that the Athrava immigrants formed an esoteric community which kept their knowledge as an inherited treasure and that theiroccupation therefore became hereditary. In insisting on a standard of purity they introduced into the Dravidian society a division into classes on a basis similar to the pishtras of their original home. The general resemblance between the pishtras of the ancient Iranians and the chaUirvarnas spoken of ia the Purushasuktavi ot the Eigveda is very close. Though in the Brahminic tradition the Vaisyas are described as agriculturists and merchants, yet in the literature of the Buddhists they are ordinarily called grihapathis or heads of families. Further among the Iranians the admission of an individual into the community of the higher classes was marked hy the investiture of the sacred thread, a ceremony similar to the one obtaining among the rfi'ij'as of Hindu society. We may therefore infer with great probability that the Brahmins are descended from the Soma-Haoma priests of the ancient Indo-Iranian community.

A society can not long be divided into closed groups without accepting some sort QI hierarchy. For example, when the Israelites became broken up into tribes, some were despised, and others, like Ephraim, were treated with respect. The formation of classes in Hindu society gradually led to a hierarchical organization. The chief features of this organization reveal to us the mode of its growth. The keystone of the hierarchical organization of Hindu society is the universally recognised primacy of the Brahmin caste, ^ot only does the Brahmin officiate in moat of the

oeremouies of the Hindu family, but also takes the place of the pitris fanoestors) in funeral repasts and offer, ings to the manes of ancestors. The superiority of the Brahmin is one of the essential principles of the social organization of the Hindus; it is, in short, the moat certain characteristic of Hinduism. It is indeed true that everywhere the sacredotal class possesses special privileges and often holds the first rank. But rarely does it reign uncontested and by its sole power. Most often it has to reckon with a secular power, which limits tho extent of its privileges and sometimes gradually reduces its influence. For example, in Egypt, as Herodotus tells us, the priests held the highest rank, had special privileges, were exempt from all taxes, and lauds were specially reserved for them. The temple priests formed a class by themselves, not mixing with the people engaged in civil work. But the sovereign had complete confcrol over temples and he placed his creatures at their head. All estates in the realm were under the domination of the royal sovereign. Similarly in the Middle Ages the spiritual power in spite of its great influence did not succeed in subordinating the temporal power. During the Catholic theocracy the kings ruled by divine right and they were all powerful. On the other hand, in the Brahminic theocracy, it is the priests that remain at the pinnacle. Among the Hindus the Sacerdotal class has become so firmly established and its influence has so deeply permeated the community that it has been able to prescribe, under the sanction of religion, a code of elaborate prescriptions on domestic and personal conduct which is accepted by all as the ideal, the relative conformity to which settles the status of every group of the Hindu society from top to bottom

How did the Brahmin attain this position? It was not by organized effort. There is as much lack of unity among the Brahmins as among the others. All Brahmins do not obey a single superior as do, for example, the Jesuits Nor can they be said to constitute what may be called a clergy. There is nothing in Brahminism which has the semblance of an organisation. It has never had councils for settling disputed points or electing a superior. The Brahmins have never lived together in convents, submitting to the same discipline, as did the Buddhist bhikshus. The Brahmins are priests without a church; they have no commandments to obey nor a pontiff to venerate. The great article of faitji

of Brahminism is the sacrosanct character of the born priest. 3?hongh according to the sacred texts the young Brahmin has to go through a novitiate extending over many years, learning the vedas from the revered mouth of his teacher, yet the Brahmin is born and not made His rights and privileges are not the price of his knowledge or virtue, but the prestige of his blood. Since it is birth that confers dignity on the Brahmin, all Brahmins are equal. Just as Brahminism has no church, so it is also a religion without dogmas. It is defined rather by rites than by dogmas, by practices than by ideas. All can enter it and none need go out of it. Its pantheism easily embraces all creations of polytheism; the most divergent deities can find a place in it by becoming avataras, relations, or servants of the traditional deities. The essential of Brahminism is the veneration of the Brahmin and the cow. coupled with the observance of certain rules as to inter marriage and interdicing, the wearing of marks on the forehead, and the worship of the Brahminic gods. It is therefore closed only to the mlechchas, as those are dubbed who do not accept the supremacy of the Brahmin and the rules of caste. It is not the power of organization that gives strength to the priests of Hinduism. It is the preponderating part that religion plays in the life of the Hindu that gives power to the priests. For the Hindu every natural habit and duty hts a religious significance. It is impossible for him to draw a distinction between the profane and the sacred. His religion defines fo» him his customary rule of every day life, his social identity, his whole status and the signs by which he may be known and described. A man is not a Hindu, because he inhabits India, or belongs to any particular race or state but because he is a Brahminist. "This omnipresence of the rehgious sanction and the rigidity which it imparts to diversity elsewhere susceptible of diminition or effacement is not only the most prominent feature of the social organization of India, but is also peculiar to the latter marking it out as distinct from any other civilization in the world."

Eeligion is born of a feeling ol dependence on unknown factors in the endeavour towards self - preservation. The manner in which this feeling is interpreted depends on the way in which man understands his own nature, his personality. To interpret dream life the primitive man imagined the presence inside a living animal or man exhibiting spontaneous motion a subtle animal or man called the soul

(atman). The soul was supposed to enter the body at birth and quit it at death and to form the active agent in the • movements of the various motor organs. Wherever motion was perceived, a soul or ghost was supposed to be present. The whole universe was peopled with spirits; those favorable to man were called devas and those harmful to man were called asuras. The deities of the Vedic hymns were spirits corresponding to the forces of nature. They moved in the heavens and ruled the course of the sun and stars, they rode on the storms, moved in the waters, and lived in the friendly fire. The human mind is incapable of expressing its relation to the deities which it has fashioned in any other way than by attributing to them a nature similar to its own. Ha,n simply sees himself, his nature, his human nature, the best and the worst that he knows, projected on to the clouds. No wonder that the Vedic gods possess human attributes. Sacrifices of burnt flesh and intoxicating soma drink were offered to them to persuade them to satisfy the wishes of the worshippers.

The oldest religious document of India is a collection of hymns, called the Rig Veda. In the initial enthusiasm of discovery these hymns were, for a long time, believed to be the spontaneous effusions of a primitive pastoral people. But now most indologists are convinced that in the largo majority of hymns we have a liturgy of a sacerdotal and artificial character, whose oiigin from a long past is clearly indicated by its obscure and stereo-typed phraseology. In their present form the majority of hymns appear made for a cult and not for any of the acts of the ordinary religious life. They seem designed above all for those great oeremouies in which was poured the sacred liquor soma. We rarely find in them the expression of a simple religious sentiment or popular belief; they form the poetry of a caste, destined for an aristocratic cult. The care with which this poetry designedly avoids all precise conception of gods proves that it is not popular but sacerdotal. The personality of the deity seems to play only a secondary role. The centre of religion is in the religious act itself and not in the divinity which is its object. Even if all the sacred literature has not emanated directly from the Brahmin caste, it is through their intermediary that it has been transmitted. We oan therefore bo confident that the doctrine relating to the sacrifice as embodied in it has originated from that caste.

In the beginning sacrifices were probably offered with a view to avert the wrath of the gods whom men feared. But in later times sacrifices were regarded as a means of communication between man and gods. As fire is both celestial and terrestrial and also passes between the earth and the heavens in the form of lightning (gariitvian), Agni, the god of fire, kindled in every sacrifice, was supposed to act as the middleman between men and gods and bear the oblation to the gods. If sacrifice could be a means of communicating with the godS: it would not be impossible for man to enter into economic relations with them. If man could offer the gods something that would please them, it should also be possible for the gods to give man in return what he might desire. Thus in due course sacrifice developed into a kind of bartering with the gods. "Dchi me, dadami ta-I give in order that you may give "is the burden of almost every vedic hymn, and is the explicit or implied reason of every Vedic sacrifice. From the conception of sacrifice as a kind of barter easily arose the idea that sacrifice could not only buy the gods, but that the gods could, even against their" will, be coerced by means of sacrifice to do what man desired. As Prof. Sylvain Levi has pointed out in his La Doctrine du Sacrifice dans les Brchrr.anas, the sacrifice which regulates the relation of man to the gods, is a mechanical act, operating bi- its own spontaneous power, and the magic art of the priest brings out what is hidden in the bosom of nature. The hymn to the gods uttered by the priest at the sacrifice was known as the *Brahman*. In course of time it came to signify a magical incantation, possessing magical power. Every letter, syllable and word of the incantation, possessed a supernatural potency. Finally it became the creative source and primal cause of all things. Says the Satapatha Brah-Vicuctiu: "Tbe creator through austerity created first the incantation, the Brahman or Vvda,, therefore the Brahman is the foundation of everything here." As the Brahman or incantation became the personification of all creative power and of all knowledge, so likewise the chanters of the Brahn.an, the Brahmanas, came to be considered as the very personifications of all revealed lore and of all divine powers. It is the belief that the Brahmins, as the guardians of the sacrifice, possessed the knowledge and power to open and shut to man the approach to the gods, which forms the profound source of the privileges of the Brahmin caste. It

is not mere descent that forms the reason of the Brahinin's superiority. For, like the Brahmin the Kshatriya also claims to he of pure bh od. In the *Amhatla. Sutta* Sakyamuni claims for the Kshatriya superiority on the grouni of purity of descent. "So it is clear," he says, "whether you regard it from the male, or from the female side, that it is the Kshatriyas who are the best peov.le, and the Brahmanas their inferiors." Similarly in the *Vanaparr-z oi the Maha-Jiharata* Brahma Sanatkumara says: "The Kshatriya is the hest of those among the folk who put their trust ia lineage." It is the nature of the function reserved for the Brahmin that determined the prestige of his blood.

Through their priestly office the Brahmins came to be divine. The operations needed to act on the will of the gods were complex, involving innumerable manipulations and recitations and could not be effected without special training. But it was not this training alone that tended to raise the Brahmin in the estimation of the other Hindus. According to primitive ideas the sacrifice intended to put man in communication with the gods also invested the man who performed the sacrifice with a special nature: the saorificer himself became a sacred being. In the words of the S-Jtapatna Braimianam "he who is consecrated draws night to the gods and becomes one of the deities." ".\ll rormulas of the coisecration are ovdgrahhana (elevatory), since he is consecrated elevates himself (i/f/.^ra?)/)) from this world to the world of the, gods. He elevates himself by these formulas." "He who is consecrated becomes both Vishnu and a sacrificer; for when h-! is consecrated, he is Vishnu, and when he sacrifices, he is the sacrificer " The means by which the sacrificer passes from the human to the divine is a simulation of a new birth. He is sprinkled with water as a symbol of seed. He feigns to bean embryo, and shuts himself in a special hut, which represents the womb Under his robe he wears a belt and over it the ski:i of a black antelope; the belt stands for the navel string, and the robe and the black antelope skin represeuj the inner and outer membranes (the amnion and the chorion) in which the embryo is wrapt He must not scratch himseii with his nails or a stick, tecause he is an embryo and an embryo scratched with nails or a stick will die If he moves about in the hut, it is because the foetus moves about in the womb If he keeps his fists doubled up, it is because an unborn babe does the same. If

in bathing he puts off the black antelope skin but retains his robe, it is because the child is born with the amnion but not with the chorion. By these practices he acquires, in addition to his old natural and mortal body, a new body that is sacramental and immortal, invested with superhuman owers, encircled with an aureole of fire. Thus, by a new irth, a regeneration of his carnal nature, man becomes divine. The habitual performance of the sacrifice gives the saorificer a second nature and makes him one with those divinities whom he puts in communication with men. The saturation of the human nature with the divine nature could be so deep that the sacred character of the sacrificer remains attached to him not only during his life but is also transmitted to his descendants; the divine nature, having passed into the blood, becomes a property of the stock. Thus have come into being the Brahmins, the priests by birth, the ' supermen " of Hinduism, whom the Atharvana Veda hails as the "kinsmen of the gods." All Brahmins are therefore equal.

In principle the Brahmin originally discharged the function of preventing the malign powers from obstructing the aim pursued by the sacrificer (Yajamana). But little by little in virtue of his possession of the efBcacious words he extended the field of his activity, and finally made the cult into a sort of magic. Thus it became possible at a later stage to append without any opprobrium th.3 formulas of sorcery to the Sama Veda, which, in virtue of its musical character, has been described as the most august of the Vedas. If certain passages of the Rig Veda express horror of sorcery, it is not that the Rig Veda finds sorcery morally reprehensible, but sees in it a dangerous rival. The knowledge of the sacred rites proved a powerful but delicate weapon in the hands of the Brahmin and placed the welfare of those that paid him at his mercy. Religion was concentrated in the person of the priest and the laity were pushed aside. Thus arose the distinction of men into two classes, sacred and profane. That commensality between two individuals creates a close connection, that community of aliments produces identity of nature, is a universal idea among primitive peoples, and forms the foundation of one of the most important forms of sacrifice, called the communal sacrifice. It is this idea that has resulted in the interdiction of all commensality between the members of the different

castes as well as the scruples about purity of blood and promiscuity of marriage, while the idea of purification of the fleshly abode of the souJ by a new magical birth {upaiuiycLna} gave rise to the idea of untouchability.

From the Vedic period religion moves in India in an atmosphere of magic. T#e priests are entirely magicians. The knowledge of the mantras and the sacrificial tantras enabled the Brahmins to dominate the people of India. A well-known Sanskrit verse says, daivadhinfim Jagatsarvam, tanmantram mantradliinam tudaivatam; hraiwiana'ihlnam, hrahmana mamadevata. The world is subject to the gods, and the gcis are subject to the sacrificial waifiz-as; and the mantras themselves are in the hands of the Brahmins; hence the Brahmins are the real gods, though they live **on** this earth. Similarl}' says the *Satapatha Brahriianam*: "Verily there are two kinds of gods; for, indeed, the gods are the gods; and the Brahmins who have studied and teach the sacred lore are the human gods. The sacrifice is of two kinds; oblations constitute the sacrifice to 'the gods; and gifts to the priests that to the human gods, the Brahmins who have studied and teach the sacred lore." lithe belief in the mysterious eflacacy of the sacrifice gave preeminence to the Brahmin, the development of that supremacy was due largely to the ambition and selfishness of those who profited by it. Tlie system of castes being profitable to them, the Brahmins fostered and turned it to their own advantage. The sacerdotal caste employed its intellect to turn to acco:.int the religious instincts of the people and to deepen and extend their hold on their minds. How else could v.e account for the customs and practices now obtaining among the Hindus'? The ortho'^ox Sudra venerates the Erahmin to such an extent that he will not cross the shadow of a Brahmin. Miuy of them take a vow not to touch any food in the morning before drinking vipracharanamrita, that is, the water in which the toe of a Brahmin has been dipped. The pride of the Brahmin is such that he does not bow to the images of the gods worshipped in a Sudra's house, though the cfSciating priests may be Brahmins. Wherever the Brahmins went. they naturally sought to perpetuate their own social ascendancy by inculcating their own superiority as custodians of a divine revelation and expounders of sacred laws, by surrounding their own vocation with the halo of divine inspiration and sanction. They placed themselves above king and nobility. The priest who consecrated the king presented him to the people, siying: "Here is yo.'/r king, O people; the king of the Brahmins is Soma." Though the Brahmin did not ostensibly participate in the secular govern**niert**, the king was bound to employ a Brahmin as *jjurohitn*. or house-priest, who occupied as such the position of primeminister. In the J Uarcya Drahmaiiam it is declared: "Verily the Kods do not eat the food offered bj' the king who is •vfhhout a, jjitroll(ia: Wherefore let the king, who wishes to sacrifice, pUice a Brahmin at the head." The king had to propitiate each one of tho five destructive powers of the pvrohita to obtain strarga. The ways of propitiation were by servile sjieecb, by washing his feet, by adorning him, by satiati; g his belly, and finally bywelcfmiin him to tha seraglio in order that be might quench tlie "burning, blazing fire of hia upastiHi" We see all these in the customs obtaining even now in the royal household of Travanccre, where the kings have ."\air mothevs and Nambudri] 'rahmin fithers.

It might seem rather strange that the king.«T the ncbility should have yielded the first place to the Brahmins. Elsewhere the fighting men have taken precederos and even been the spirit.; al guides of the people. It was the blcodbond that gave the old English society its military' and social form. Something akin, represented by the word vartta, the Vedic word for social status, \vas the basis of the early Hindu social sj'stem. This was supersede.! afterwards by the i(iea of ritualistic purity, but this change did not take place without a struggle The sacred hrrk.^ Iiaro preserved souvenirs of the attempts made hy the Kshatriyas, the nobility, to put down the power c£ thd i^r, hujins. Though the Brahmins were generallj- the priests, we find the exceptional cases of the rajanya Visvamitra and L'evapi who acted as priests. The former is said to have attained the status ci a Brahmin by the power o; austerities (tapas), but this position was not given him without question. '• The deep-seated antagonism between the Vasistha and Visvamitra septs," says Fick, '• was in reality an expression of the struggle for snpermacy between the nobility and priesthood." If we may accept the legend of Parasurama as containing Some historical germs, bloody wars must have characterised the rivalry for power between the Brahmins and the Kshatriyas. A country where people are divided into classes on a religious basis, the priest always succeeds in inciting at

his wish one class against another. Hence the fights between the Brahmins and the Kshatriyas were in all probability fought for the former by the great mass o[the people. Though the cause of these fights is said :, o be the robbing hy the warriors of the treasures which ,the priests had acquired by the performance of sacrifices, yet they were essentially due to the endeavour of the warrior class to put down priestly arrogance. The rivalry between ftho Brahmins and the Kshatriyas could end only in the downfall of the one or the other. The nobility failed. The natural result was the theory that the Brahmin could exist without the Kshatriya, but that the Kshatriya could not exist without the Brahmin purohita. The Hindu theory of kingship is that the king is an absolute and responsible ruler who unites in his own person all legislature for the purpose of enforcing the rules of the various castes. No wonder that the Brahmins enjoyed many political privileges. They were exempt from taxation under all circumstances, "even if the king should starve"; for even the worst crimes they could not be executed or chastised, nor could their property be copfi<3ated It is not improbable that the high claims of the Brahmins to priority in the state proceeds from the purohitas rather than from the ordinary sacrificial prissts.

The belief in the power of magic was the fertile source, not only of the abnormal development of the sacerdotal system, b it also of asceticism. Of all sacrifices the greatest is thai in which a human being is offered to the gods. There can be uo doubt that human sacrifices were once common in India. "Despite protestant legends, despite formal disclaimers," says Prof. E. W. Hopkins, "human sacrifices existed long after the period of the Rig Veda, where it is alluded to." The MahiivdsUi says that it is the advent of the Buddha that put an end to asvamedham, purushamedhatn, pmidariham. and other kinds oi; abominable sacrifices in India A human sacrifice was very expensive, for ordinarily it cost one thousand cattle to buy a human victim for sacrifice It waa indeed meritorious for one to put oneself to this expense, but it would be more meritorious tor the very individual to whose benefit accrued the sacrifice to immolate himself. Thus was evolved the theory and practice of self-mortification as a means of coercing the gods to bestow gifts on man. The Hindu books are full of legendary accounts of the wonderful powers attained through self-mortification and austere penance. By self-mortification Eavana became Invulnerable against gods and demons By austere fervour Nahusha obtained undisputed sway of the three worlds. By intense austerities Kshatriya Visvamitra raised himself to the Brahmin caste. In order to attain the status of a Brahmin Matanga, a chandala, went through such a course of austerities as alarmed the gods. Though his request was not granted, yet he secured the right to be honoured. Such was the profound faith of the people of Ancient India in the power of asceticism. So the sannyasin or the forest-haunting ascetic became the final stage in the Brahminio ideal, the aim being to seek hidden knowledge in the retirement from the world. These forest-haunting philosophers developed a new class of literature called the Amnyakas, in which are found the TJpanishads.

The Uponishada are books containing theosophic speculations based on the Vedas. They are the source of all orthodox religious movements in Hinduism, even at the present day. In them the teachers of the highest knowledge are not Brahmins While the Bralimins were heaping sacriflee on sacrifice and multiplying sophistical and symbolical explanations of the sacrifice, the Kshatriyas seem to have devoted their attention to the solution of the problems of life, to the understanding of the relation of the individual to the whole. In the Upanishads the Brahmins are frequently represented as going to the great Kshatriya kings to become their pupils. In the second book of the Briliodaranyaka- L'panishad is found the following story, of which a slightly different version occurs in the Kansitakl UpauiaJic.d also. A proud and learned Brahmin, Balaki Gargya, comes on his journey to Ajatasatru. king of Kasi, and says to him: "I will declare to you the Brahman." The king, highly pleased, promises him a big reward of a thousand cows. The Brahmin begins to expound his wisdom: -'The spirit in the sun I venerate as the Brahman" But the king interrupts him, saying that he knew that already. Then the Brahmin speaks about the spirit in the moon, in lightning, wind, fire, water, akas, but the king already knows all that. And whatsoever the Brahmin might say was already known to the king. The Brahmin becomes silent. But Ajatasatru asks him: "Is that alH" and the Brahmin answers: "Yes, that is all," king says: "Your little knowledge is not the Brahman." Then the Brahmin desires the king to take him as a pupil; Ajatasatru replies: "It is against nature that a Brahmin should learn from a rayani/a and depend upon him for theunderstanding of the Brahman, but I shall show it to you nevertheless." In another story, found in the fifth book of the Chandogya Ufanishad well as in the sixth book ot the Brihadaranyaha Upanishad, a young Brahmin, Svetaketu, comes to a convention of king Pravahana Jaivali of the-Panchala country. The king puts the Brahmin youth some questions and the young Brahmin confesses bis inability to answer them with the instruction given by his father. Discouraged he returns to his father and reproaches him for instructing him so poorly as to be unable to answer even one of the three questions put to him by a simple rajanya. The father replies: "You have known me sufficiently to understand that I taught you all I know. Come, let us go to the king and learn from him." The king received Svetaketu's father with great respect and asked him to choose a gift. The Brahmin, refusing all other gifts, chose as his gift thft answers to the questions the king put to bis son. At first the king was unwilling but after a while he agreed, saying: " Would that neither you nor your ancestors had trespassed on us that this truth might never have set up residence among the Brahmins But to you, since you are so inquiring, I shall communicate our wisdom." In a third story which ocoars in the fifth book of the Chandogya Upanishad a number of highly learned Brahmins led by T'ddalaka Aruni, an inquirer after the Brahman, seek the help of Asvapathi, th6 king of the Kaikeya country, for disclosing to them the true nature of the "omnipresent self". The chief import of those stories, whether they be historical or legendary, is that their occurrence in genuine Brahminical books shows that the Brahmins did not claim as the inheritance of their caste tile Brahraan-Atman doctrine of the Upanishads. Even in philosophical cisoussiontj where a Brahmin, such as Yagnavalkya appears £s the teacher, it is a Kshatriya, such as Janaka, the king of Mithila, that plays the prominent part, and the Brahmin is Bndeavouring to please the king by an allegortcal interpretation of the sacrificial rites in the light of the Kshatriya philosophy.

Not only for the doctrine of identity of the individual soul with the world-soul does India appear to be indebted to the Kshatriya caste, but to it also seems due the theory of transmigration of souls. The Rig Veda contains no trace of

belief in the transmigration of souls after death. The view that rules in its hymns is that the souls of the good go after death to Yamas heaven of light, where they lead a blissful life in the' company of pitris, that the evil ones remain shut out from it and go into 'the nether darkness', and that there is no return of either to earth life. In the Brahmanama there is the added doctrine that man is liable to retribution for his good or evil deeds, that he will expiate actions done in this world hy repeated births and rebirths in the other world. In the Dpanishads the retribution for good or evil deeds is not confined to repeated rebirths of che soul in the other world, but the soul has to come again on earth to work out the reward or penalty which good or evil deeds necessitate. This is the doctrine of transmigration Oi souls as it no'.v obtains in India. Of this doctrine of metempsychosis king Pravahana tells the Brahmin Goutama: "This knowledge has not till now resided with a Brahmin." doctrine of reincarnation appears to have been a hereditary secret teaching of the Rajanyas. One of the aspects of animism is that conception is the reincarnation of a human or animal soul. The thoughtful Kshatriya modified this doctrine with a view to reconcile the apparent conlliot between his ideal of j'jstioe and the stern realities of life wherein **not** infrequently the wicked enjcy and the righteous Suffer. He must have seen many uurighteous individuals in the Brahmin caste and many righteous individ'ials in the other castes. iS'aturally he tried to console himsolt by reflection. If the aim of life was the freeing of the soul from rebirths in abodes of punishment or from rebirths on earth in the body of a man of lower caste or in a aegradiiig animal existence, why should it not be possible ior oues soul by obedience to the will of the gods, veneration of the Brahmins, performance of religious duties, and observance of the laws and ordinances of ones osvn caste, not only to gain rewarda in heaven, but also to be reborn on earth in the family of zhigher caste, even as a Brahmin 7

The continuance of the sacrificial system indicates that the Brahmins were not eager to accept the progressive ideas of the Kshatriyas. But when these ideas got into the air and became popular, the Brahmins could not help adopting them and endeavour to harmonise them with their practices By representinj; ritual and sacrifice as the first step to knowledge, they combined two wholly incongruoua elementa.

They even turaed the theory oi metempsychosis to their own beneiit. The individual soul could ascend to the status of a Brahmin only after passing through a series of births. Consequently, the being that attained this position deserved reverence from all. Only as a Brahmin vvbo had undergone the preparatory training could the individual soul attain the supreme knowledge of the oneness oi the iadividual atman with, the Brahman or the universal atman. Although the Kshatriya teachers of the Upanishads perceived the hollowness of the sacrificial system and its absurd symbolic character, they did not, beyond consoling themselves with the thought that he who knew the highest Brahman became himself Brahman and therefore immortal, openly proclaim their knowledge to the people at lar^e aiid pose as teachers in opposition to the priestly class. They taught their doctrines only to some Brahmins who as a matter of course kept their knowledge secret. Even in open discassions this teaching was not imparted in the hearing of all. In the fourth bock of tho BrUuu'arAniio.'ka Upani?h:id we have an account of a public disputation on the knowledge that liberates the soul between the Rishi YagnaviUkya and the Brahmins present at a sacrifice by Janaka, tho king of Videha. Artabhaga the Jaratkarava questio. 's Yajnavalkya as to what happens to a man who has not von liberation when bodies. Yajnavalkya says: "Give me thy hand, good Artabhaga; we will find out the answer to thy qxiestion, but this is no matter to discuss in public." So they go out and confer together and come to the eonclasion that the law of Karma sends the soul from body to body and that a man therefore becomes holy by holy works and unho.} by u..^.oly works in previous lives. The teacher,s of the Upanishads never attempted to bring their teachings into contact with the daily life of the ordinary man.

It i.i a glory of Buddhism that itdiffn.^ed broad-cast what was hidden in the community of the leiirned. Like tha teachers of the Upanishads tho founder of iJuddhism, Goutama Sakyamuni, was a Kshatriya. He thoroughly grasped the teachings of the Upanishads and developed them to their logical consequences and promulgated the saiJh.irma (true principles) in opposition to the sanatav.a ,/harma, the '• eternal principles ' of the Brahmins and their compromising Kshatrya followers. The pouring of the new wine of truth into the old bottles of superstition cannot but give new

vitality to error and prolong its duration and bring about •worse enervation. Hypocrisy may be a valuable social virtue, but all progress is due to loyalty to one's own intelligence and fidelity to truth. Gautama Sakyamuni saw the futility of atoning for evil deeds by the destruction of life and the impossibility of practising religion without compassion and nohlcsse oblige. He therefore strenuously opposed the sacrificial system. The sacrificial rites and their attendant superstitions and the knowledge by which the Brahmins pretended to put men in relation with the gods appeared to him a mere delusion. He spoke of the Brahmins as blind leaders of the blind. If, as the Upanishads taught, the Brahman pervaded all things and was identical with the individual souh where was the spiritual inequality betwee.i man and man? He therefore rejected He taught that the caste system as a harmrul institution salvation from sorrow and suffering was within the reach of every one, whether he be a Brahmin, a Kshatriya, a Vaisya, a Sudra, or a Mlecha, that every one, whatever may be his birth or rank, could attain the goal by the attainment of true knowledge and by devotion to the welfare oi fellow beings. He carried the theory of reincarnation to its utmost spiritual extent, and proclaimed that the actions of men are the sole controUing influence on their past, present and future. He was thus led to deny the existence of any external being or god who could interfere with the immutable law of cause and effect. He attempted to link together all mankind as parts of one universal whole and therefore denounced the isolated self-seeking of the hn man heart as " the heresy of individuality." By basing his teachings on the liberation of the individual from suffering he endeavoured to make men moral, compassionate and benevolent. The Buddha demonstrated the futility of caste distinctions by the following simple arguments.

"Between ashes and gold there is a marked difference, bat between a Brahmana and a Chandala there is nothing of the kind. A Brahmana is not produced like fireby the friction of dry wood; he does not descend from the sky nor from the air, nor does he come out piercing the earth. The f3rahmana is brought forth from the womb of a woman in exactly the same way as a Chandala. All human beings have organs exactly alike; there is not the slightest difference in kind. In plants, insects, fishes, snakes, birds, quadrupeds the marks that constitute the species are abundant, whereas amongst

men this is not the case. Neither the hair, nor the formation of the skull, nor the colour of the skin, nor the vocal organ, nor any other part of the hody exhibits any specific differences. Further, when sexual intercourse takes place between the members of different castes, the children in all cases take after the mother as well as the father, and there is no dii3Bculfcy in assigning them to their proper parents. What then is the support for supposing the existence of different species among mankind?

"The Brahmana is a specifically Indian phenomenon. In the neighbouring countries no Brahmana exists. In those countries there are only masters and slaves. Those who are rich are masters, and those who are poor are slaves. The rich may become poor, and the poor rich. Even in India when a Kshatriya, a Vaisya, or a Sudra abounds in wealth, the members of the Brahmana caste serve him, thej' wait for his commands, and use soft words to gratify him; to minister to his wants they wake up before him and do not go to sleep till he has retired to rest. Where then lies the difference between the four castes? Tha declaration of the Brahmanas that they alone are the highest caste and others are of low caste is an empty sound.

If a Brahmana commits sin, he suffers for it like every other man. Like every other man the Brahmana also has to abstain from evil deeds, if he desires salvation. The ethical world-order gives the lie to the theory of the specific inequalities among mankind. The native capacities and talents are of the same kind everywhere. The Sudra who is despised tor his caste is as much capable of good thoughts and noble deeds as the Brahmana. If a bath can purify a Brahmana, it can equally purify a man of any other caste. Nor does fire show any special regard for differences of caste. The fire, produced by the members of the so-called highest caste by rubbing costly fragrant sticks, arises just in the same way as that produced by the members of the so-called lowest caste by rubbing pieces of wood from a dirty foul-smelling dog-trough, or swine-trough? On the contrary the good sense of the Brahmanas themselves proves that it is the ethical worth of an individual that confers superiority. For, in distributing alms they prefer an ethically good natured man, even when he may exhibit no distinguishing marks, nay, even when he may not have gone through the initiatory ceremony known as "second birth". It follows therefore that, -while exact information can be obtained as to the purity or imparity of an individual's conduct, no exact information can be obtained as regards birth and descent-

"By birth and descent all men are alike; they become different only through differences in occupation, and they are designated accordingly. Some are called husband men, some artisans, some merchants, some kings, some robbers, some priests, and so on. In one and the same caste different members follow dilferent professions. Have we not among the Brahmanas physicians; necromancers; musicians; merchants; agriculturists owning cattle, poultry and slaves; wealthy landholders who give much wealth as the portion of their daughters and receive much when their sons are married; butchers who k'dl animals and sell their flesh; those that provide gratification for the lust of others; those who tell lucky hours; those who sit dharana and enforce gifts from kings; those that live like savages in the wilderness; those who get their livelihood after the manner of those who break into houses to steal; beggars with long hair, dirty teeth, immense nails, filthy bodies, and heads covered with dust and lice; those who profess to be released from all desires and to be ready to release others also? How, then, can it be said that Brahma made the Brahmana for the performance of sacrifices and the study of the veda, the Kshatriya for sovereignty and command, the Vaisya for ploughing the land- and the Sudra for serving and obeying the rest? If we look closely, we see no difference betvv'een the body of a prince and that of a slave. What is essential is that which may dwell in the most miserable frame, and which the wisest have always saluted and honoured. talk of "high and low castes." of "pure Brahmanas, the only sons of J3rahma", is nothing but cant. The four castes are equal. He is a Chandala who cherishes hatred; who torments and kills living beings; who steals, or commits adultery; who does not pay his debts; who maltreats aged parents; or fails to support them: who gives evil counsel and hides the truth; who does not return hospitality nor render it: who exalts himself and debases others; who ignores the virtues of others and is jealous of their success. He is a Brahmana who is tree from sin. Not by birth does one become a Chandala, nor by birth does one become a Brahmana; by deeds one becomes a Chandala, by deeds one becomes a Brahmana."

Just as the light of the sun and moon shines upon all' the world, on the virtuous and the wicked, on the foul-smelling and the fragrant, on the high and the low, just as their beams are sent down equally, without partiality, so did the teaching of the Buddha diffuse its intellectual and ethical Ught on all without any difference. All were admitted \vithout distinction of caste and creed into the Sangha. All the ordained disciples of the Buddha gave up caste when they joined the order. But this renunciation of caste does not appear to have been demanded of his lay followers. Perhaps the social conditions prevalent during his time prevented Sakyamuni from preaching a general crusade against caste. But the caste distinctions that obtained among the Buddhist laity had no rehgious significance. An incident m the life of Emperor Asoka brings out clearly the bearing of caste in Indian Buddhist society. After Asoka became a Buddhist, it was his custom whenever he met the ordained disciples of the Buddha to salute them by touching their feet with his head. On one occasion his Hindu Minister told him: " My lord, it is not seemly for thee thus to prostrate thi-self before the bh ikahvs of all castes." To this the Emperor replied: Yea. by a sentiment of pride and delusion, fostered by beauty and power, dost thou desire to dissuade me from prostrating myself at the feet of the religieux. And if my head, that worthless object which no man dtsires even when he may obtain it for nothinp. meet an occassion for purification and acquire some merit thereby, what is there unlawful in that? In the Sakya-bhikshus thou regardest nought save the renunciation of caste and thou beholdest not their virtues; wherefore, puffed with pride of birth, thbu forgettest thy error, both thyself and others. Caste may be considered when it is a question of marriage or of an invitation, but not of the Dharma; for the Dharma is concerned with virtues, and virtues have nothing to do with caste. When a man of high birth falls into vice, he is blamed by tho world; wherefore when a man of low caste is virtuous, should he not inspire respect? It is by reason of their character that mens bodies are honoured or despised. The Sakya-bhikshus should be revered, as their character has been completely changed and purified by the words of the Compassionate One.'

That the caste distinctions observed by the Buddhist laity had no religious significance is also proved by the fact that the Buddhists mever assigned a supernatural or mystic origin to differences of oaste. According to the Bnddhista mankind had in the beginning all property in common. Later a distribution took place and each person laid up provisions for oneself. After this it happenned that one person took another's property without the consent of the latter, as if it were his own. The latter punished the evil-doer by his own hand. Then in view of what was happening, people thought: "Let us assemble together and choose from our midst those who are the finest looking, the largest, the strongest, and let us make them lords over our fields and they shall punish those of us who do what is punishable, and they shall recompense those of us who do what is praiseworthy, and from the products of the fields and of the fruits we gather we shall give them a portion." So they gathered together and chose a suitable person to be lord over their fields. As he was lord over the fields and kept them from harm, he was called Kshatriya or "protector of the fields." Some persons, to find happiness in meditation and seclusion, left their villages for the wilds. These were called "detached minds " or Brahmanas. Later, some of these gave up contemplation, composed mantras forming the Vedas; from their habit of repeating them they were called pathakas. Among those that lived in villages some applied themselves to different handicrafts and occupations in their homes, made different kinds of things and offered them for sale. These were called Vaisyas or merchants. Thus originated according to the early Buddhists the several castes in a natural way and not as the Brahmins claimed ia a transcendental manner. For the Brahmins there is caste among the gods and also animals and even in the metres of their holy verses. For the Brahmins the countries where the system of castes does not exist are inlccnc'na and those that dislike the system of castes are the enemies of their religion.

Though the Brahmins saw that the teaching of Sakyamuni was subversive of the system of caste and of the supremacy of the born priest, yet they did not experience its full practical significance till Saddharna came under the aegis of a sovereign power. Though in his day Sakyamuni was patrouised by many kings, the Sangha, constituted on a democratic basis, was concerned only with the spiritual upUtting of its members and those that patronised it. Buddhism took no part in any struggle for temporal power. On the other hand, according to Brahminio theories, the king

nilecl only through the divine power of the pHrnhUa, whose will oould override that of t!ie king. Though tho l^Srahmins consecrated the king of the people, j^et he was not their king. Soma, was the sovereign of the Brahmins. Ft'n.co Rrahmini.sm cor.id not compromise itself with any ts'npDral power striving to be independent of the spiritual p-.wer of the Brahmin Things went on smoothly tiU i idi.^enoas kings ruled over India. There is no indication" tha" o-.'-re the time of Asoka the teaching of the Budlha was kno .Tii iievi. \ii verv narrow limits. Alexander's invasion of Tncli.i i;..rcduced foreij.;ners into the land. He left behin.i blaa crdcni^ts and a few satrapies. On Alexander's death his [n.liui 'loininions fell into a state of disorder. The Indian k!Pnros, who clainjpil control over tlie satrapy we.-t; of tb.p I'l.uis, was murdered by an assassin hired by Eudenos. the satrap of that T.TOvinoe. Tho most powerful indigonor? king who owned allegiance to the foreigner was thus removed out of the way, and the field became open to adventurers. An adventurous Maurya chief, Chandragupta, made himself master 0-' the Panjab. A wily Brahmin, name,' Chanakya, slew the last king of the rnlin; dynasty cf Tsh.: <; x'Vi3., thoa the lar^RSt and richest sta'e in the interior, and ina 1^ Chandragupta kin.;. Chanakya '.^eing t!io ijrime-ministe,'-, Brahmini--iTi exercised its sway on th' destiny o' enrpir--; in tul;-,v.

Th.e ^laurya empire, founded by Cliandragnpta, passed iii 2-: ; ^.C to Lis grandson Asoka Vardhana, o':e oi the most illnstrio!i>: monarchs o; India. A record of his wcrk is pres^ervel in the F.^licts which he caused to be engr.ivod on rocks and--^tone-'iiUars. fTis rule extended all ovi r Xcrt'iern India from S9-' w sea and as far south as Pulioat. tn z:'-> BC., he undertook a campaign ngainat Kilinga, in wliiu'^ '"one hundred and fif:y thr'usand were carried away c,;;t:re one hundred tho'.isand wer.-^ slain anl m;iny ti.ncs ;-hat number periiheu." O.ie of his Edict? say,=: "11:,^ Maj-zsty feels remo.\(^se\) on account ci the conquest of the Kalin\(^as\). because, during tb.- subjugation of a -jreviously imconquerc country, slaughter, death, and taking away- captive of tho people necessarily occur, whereat His Majesty feels profon;.! sorrow and regret." There i. no eason to doibt that .\soka s conversio:; to Buddhism was due to his remorse lor Hie sufferin's caused by the carnage in his conquest of K Lii.-. 'a The ethics of the Edicts are purely Buddhist. The idea of duty as associated with the notions of caste is dropped. The teaching of the Edieis is purelj' human and severely practical, **riie** i-jdicts ignore the existence of p siprame deity and iasisi, **Gii**; be necessity of man's own self-exertioas to o!<tain happiness. The object aimed at is the happiness of all living creatures, man and beast. One Edict expressly a vows the **auLlioriL**-y of cho Blessed Buddha as the foundation of Asoka's ethical syst-jm.

Ln the moral teaching of Asoka prominence is given to two virtues, namely respect for the S'Inotity of animal lite an'J reverence to parents, superiors and elders. In the Br.;.h:ninic system tho slaughtering of animals for sacrifice playod ;i drminanr. part In che datapath a Braiiiiaiiaiit it is stat^'d thit men, horses, bulls, ra^ns, and she-goats were used for sneririee. In the Asral ii/ann Grihya Sutra mention is made of several sacrifices in willch the slaughter ci cattle formed a part. The Bn,,ldha preaclied against this vain slau^htoring of animals. Asoka therefovo prohibited all blooiiy sacrifices and all vain killing of animals. Many kinds of isnimals were absolutely protected from slaughter in any circumstances; on fifty days in the year kiUing under any pretext was eateuorically forbidJan j\l iny restrictions -.rerc imviosed on the slaying of animals tor food. In his urst Bock Edict Asoka promulgated: "Here (in the capital) no auimal may be slrov.iihterej for sacrifioe, nor m.iy the holiday feast he lield, because .His Sacred and Gracious Majesty the Xing sees much cfTcace in the holiday feas':, aitbough in c^jrtain places holiday feasts are excellent in the sight of His Sacre.i and ijiracio!s Majesty the King. i:\"r nerly. in the kitchen of His Sacred and Gracious Majesty the King, each day inaay hun.lred thousands of living creatures were slaughtered lo curries, l'iut now, when this pious Edict is being written, only three living creatures are slaughtered (daily) for aurry. to wit, two peacocks and one antelope-the antelope, bowever, not invariabl\". Even those three living creatures shall not henceforth be slaughtered." Another reat'are of tlio Brahminical system is the importance attached to ritual Bites and cercmoaies were considereil by the Brahmii's as essential ior man's well-being The Buddha declared the belief in the efficacy of purific-atory ceremonies and rites (siliL-rata paratKarsa) as an obstacle to progress i-. •i,ni/<>jo•:•:.) and their incapability to afford eraanicipation from misery. Hence m his ninth Rock Edict Asoka promutgatetl the nature of true ceromoaial: " Thus saith His Sacred and

Gracious Majesty the King-.—People perform ceremonies oa occasions of sickness, the weddings of sons, the weddings of daughters, cue birth of children, and departure on journeys. On these and other similar occasions people perform ceremonies ('auspicious ritesj. But at such times the womankind perform many luinifold, trivial, and vvorchiess ceremonies {/na^igalims Ceremonies have cercainly to be performed, alchoujh that sort bears little fruit. This sort, however,the ceremonial of I'harma -bears great fruit. In it are included proper treatment of slaves, honour to teachers, gentleness towards living creatures, and liberality towards Sramanas and i'rahmanas tthose "free from sinj. These thia,;3 and other.\(^{\text{of}}\) of the same kind are called the ceremo.ual "f iliharma. Therefore ouglit a father: son, brother, master, iriend, or comrade, nay, even a neighbour, to say: • Thi.s is meritorious, this is the ceremonial to be performed \mtil the attainment of the desired end." And it has 1)3an said—' Alms giving is meritorious. But there is no siich gitt or favour i,s the gift of Dharma, tho favour of Dhar.ma. Therefore should a friend, lover, relative, or comrade advise on such and sach an occasion, 'this is to be done, this is meritorious, by this it is possible for you to gain heaven (happiness)'. And what is better worth doing than that by which heaven is gained.'

No sovereign ever rendered to his uo.intry i Ljreuter service than did Asoka to his coantry. "The care tainen to publish the imperial elicts and co!nm.imorauive rojordo by incising thom in imperishable characters, most skiltally axeaute.l, on rocks and pillars situate,! in great cities, ou main lines of communication, or at sacred spots irequenied by tjiigi^ms, imjilies th.it a knowledge of reading and writing was widely diffused, and that many people m ist have been .ible to read the documents. Tile s-tole inference maybe drawn from the .act that the inscriptions are composed, nob in any learned scholastic tongae, bub in vernsiania.-diasects intelligible to the common people, and niolified wae.i necessary to suit local needs It is probablo t'u it iearuiug •vas fostered by the numerous monasteries an! Sbic Due h'.ys Aod giris in hundreds of villages learned their lessens from tbe aouks and nuns, as they do now in ilurmi troiii the monks. Asoka. it should be noted, oncouragei nunneries, ;ind ina'ses particular reference more than once :o lemaie ny discinies as well as to nuns. I think it likely that tae par-• autage of literacy among the Buddhist populatiou in .Asosa'a time was higher than it is now in many provinces of British India The latest returns show that in the United Provinces of Agra and Oudh, which include many great cities and ancient capitals, the number of persons per 1000 able to read and write amounts to only *hi* males and 3 females. In Burma where the Buddhist monasteries flourish the corresponding figures are 378 and 46. I believe that the Buddhist monasteries and nunneries in the days of their glory must have been, on the whole, powerful agencies for good in India, and that the disappearance of Buddhism was a great less to the country." (V. Smith)

Asoka possessed in abundance what Aristotle calls practical wisdom, the gift and ability of the statesman to guide the organizivtion, habitation and education of mankind in the direction of theoretical wisdom, that higher activity wliioli tiu.is its expression in hith thinking, fine art and religion. His aim was the creation of a kingdom, of righteousue^p without a god, the government playing the part of providence in guiding the people in the rightway. No w;inder that he is venerated as Dh,:yv:arajah (king of Bbanna) irom the Vc!<;a to Japan and from Siam to Lake Euhal. Bur astonishing is the fact that his name finds no ni-^'tioii in Brah!ninic:il literature. The reason of this (lesiqncMl omission is obvious. Though Asoka did not attempt to put ocwn Brrib.niiv.ism. yet he endeavoured to govern his empivp without I'-rahminic aid. which, according to Brahminic theories, is 'nite improper. Says the SnUipatha Bran-' ft is quite improper thnf a kinc should be with-•n-n-.. ,ii : c ' a I'rahmir. for. wJiaf ever deed he dees, uusped by the prii»>f]"!i od. thcvrin he snccee<ls not. Wherefore a Kshatriya who intduls to do a deed ought by all means to resort to a Ffahir.ln. for he verily succeeds in the deed sped liv the Bralmiin. A=okn openly avowed bis preference for Jhiddhism

.1 prr-hihited blondy sacrifices, which were so essential to the I'rahndnie religion. While his Hindu grandfather prohibiteitbi. si ir,;!iter of cows. Asoka rendered no special prot'>L'tifn to cov.s cr other horned cattlo. Ore of the most stri'idrs features of i'rahminie legislation was the reduction (f i.iarislinient in consideration of the caste of the criminal. Btahnnns were not subject to corporal punishment; they were allowed special indulgences in almost every case. As a rule Brahmins were exempt from capital punishment, except in the case of high treason when a Brahmin might be

executed by diowaing, while a member of any other caste sho'ild be b irm alive. Brahmins were exempt from liability to judicial Eortui-e for the purpose of extracting a confession. Asoka undid aU this. Ha introduced a stringent code of regulations applicabla to all cases of the pcpLation throughout his empire without distinctiou of class or creed. He insisted upon all his oflicers strictly observing the principle •. 'ajt fa saiitiXtti and vyaoahara saiuata, that is, the equality of all in the eye of the law, irrespective cf caste, colour and creed. An official machinery was provided for the strict enforcement of his orders and for the promuigation of Saddharma In his third Rook Edict .\\3oka savs: "Everywhere in my dominions the subordinate officials and riae commissioner and the district officer must proceed every live years on circuit, .: 3 well for their other bi sin ess as for this special purpose, namely, to give instruction in the A special agency of censors was employed tor the Dharma. purpose of carrying out the regulations relating to .Saddharma. In cho fifth Bock Edict we read; "jlow in all the long time past, oiiioers known as censors of Dharma ['fiiarma •naiuhihatyas) never had existed, whereas such censors were created by me.' The fruit oi all this exertion on behalf of Saddharma was, as recorded in the Rupnath Minor Rock Edic5, that those who were regarded as veritable gods [hltii,-'.'etrtjin Jambudvipa were shown to be false, a statement w'aich should be understood as indicating that the immeuiorial privileged position of the Brahmins was seriously aifected 'oy the zealous efforts of Asoka in propagating Buddhism.

Even in tha time of Asoka the Brahmin priesthood must have been covLrc-ly exerting tuemsolvea lo "ud.i^\(^\).iboat his downfall, but his official machinery was too strong for them. As soon as the sceptre dropped from his strong hand, the influence of tha Brahmin re-asserted itself. The glory of the Maurya dynasty irradualiy waned, until the last king of the line was treaoherrnsiy assassinated by his commander-inchief, Pushyamiira * 1.?6 B.C.). As a patron of tha Brahmins be proscribed Builiirlsm. He "indulged in a savage persecution of Buddhism, burning monasteries and slaying mcnks (iihihsitus) from Magadha to Jalandhar, in the Panjab." He revived the biccly -sacrifices believed by the Brahmins to possess the highest saving efficacy. He proclaimed himself a paramount sovereign, and having been consecrated by the Brahmins for the rdjasihya sacrifice, he let loose a horse to

wandsr into foreign territory. The horse wandering on the hank of the Sindhu fell into the hands of the Yavanas, but was saved by the party following it. So he celebrated with great pomp the ancient rite of the horse-sacrifice (asva-771t'. Th this period of Brahminical reaction appeared probably the famous law bock of Manu,. in which the most snpercilions claims were set up for the Brahmins and the caste system was oirried to an absurd extent. Various passages i'l the Code of Manu indicate how little the claim of the Brahmii-,s to divinity suffered through the organised Buddhist propaganda of Asoka. "The Brahmins are to be venerated at 3,1! times, as they are the highest divinity." "By his very origin the Brahmin is a god, even to the gods. " "Although Brahmins employ themselves in all sorts of mean oconpation, they must invariably be honoured; for they are something tra:s?en'.li;ntly divinn." The interests cf tb,e T^rabmins a.re Specially adv,=;need in the Code. "Whatever exists in the univercse, is all in effect the wealth of the Brahmin, since the Brahmin is entitled to it all by his primogeniture and eminence of birth." Tlie Code deprives the Sndra of all rights. "The Sndra shall not acquire v^'eaith even if he he in a position to do so, as snch conduct gives offence to the Brahmin." "A Prahmin may seize without hesitation, if he be distrpsSt=:d for ,i siib.sistecco. the goods of his Sudra slave; for, as that slave can have no property, his master may take • A man of the servile class, whether bought or unboi ght, the Brahmir may compel to perform servile duty, beea'iKi' sach a man was created by the Self-esistent for the purpose of srrvh-g Brnhmins. A Sudra, tho-.gh ernanicipated by his master, is not -pleased from a state of servitude: for, from a state which is nat'n-nl to him, by whom can he be divested?" "Whatever crime a lirahmin might commit, his person and nroperty were not to be injured; but whoover striick a Brahmin with a blade of grass would become an inferior q'ladrnpod during twenty one transmigrations." the three twice-born castes Bralimins were absolr:tely prohibited from marrying Sndra women. Any defilen-ent hy snch avi alliance was declared to be beyond all expiation. The men cf the twice-born castes vv-ere ordered to obrose their first wives from their own class, and a Sudra mnst not marry into a Idghor caste. Though there was apparently no ftlLSoliite bar to intermarriage between the different rnrnaf with the abov^-mentioned exceptions, marriage with a SudrB

woman hy any twica-born man was regarded as a debasement of the pv.rity of the family stock. But all thedi- w ere. harmless in comparison with the new principles introduced into the Code for the purpose of reducing to miserable lite numberless human beinus who harl done no \\roug except that their origin did not agree with the religio-politioai scheme of the Brahmins. Good saed in a bad soil gives of course poorer return than in good soil: still the crop is endi^rable But weed introduced into good soil produces weed abnr.dautly. Similarly the children were below the iather i! he m:irried a wife of a higher caste. This theory gave birth to a great number of mixed castes, v.'ho were mere or less despised. The lowest and njost execrable caste was that of the Ch.mdala, tbe offsirin:.; of a Sudra father and a Brahmin mother. The Cbandaui had_ tc live far froKi the abode-, o; ether n.t-n and carry signs by which .,e ruiglit be recegnised and his ^jollnting contact avoide.l. He should possess only cciruKni n.imals like do; 's end dcr.kcvo, eat out of broken ves? -Is, put on the dresses rf the tU-ud.'fc'.c. P..t the Chaud-ibi v.-r.s nrt the last in the Bjrahnunic scale; his offspring, though his wife had belonged only to the Sudra caste, was m s .ily still belo\\ him. Thus originated a great number cf mi:;f:d ca.stes, one more de.spised than tire cth-- r -And one despising anr'tlrer, iht progenitors of the depres-se.l o.-.sies of the present c.LV whose i.ntonchability is a very characteristic feature of tho caste system.

To this period m.ist be assigned the .io'jon-.l s-raue of development o; the. jJ^j^ia'-^KiraUi.. Aciin-iliry: ;o }'ro: "E W. Hopkins, "the Pumli; ooic, as we hav? i", v-.y'-'stents i- period not only snbseq.u: ,t t. rinidhism, < -al;.^ to the Greek invasion, 'OO BC. Bad.lhistio s:.,.-v.;uacy .Iready decadent is implied by tha passages wldeb aSl .do ci;. temptuouf'ly to the I'uodhljt mcnunienij a? '..i'l:;;, enured the temples of the t;oii-; ... The present orie, if u rre.'rds anything historical, re,;c:'.!s the ;irowth < r grea; power in Hindustan, a ;; ower ;h.at oould n?)t have aiisfi bt h re I'mddbistic sunreniacy withon; ioivinga 'rae - r: 'ho nrfilny name of^anr;:- inir. early literar-iire Thn:'^ is rc siich 'race: mrreovpr even tlu- id^a cf an}' such power n,= cnr c!-io depicts was unknown be.o/e the great em; ire that »r»>.-e under C'ds vie'.,' ia supportel l.w tlx- m.-'nti.-n not only Binl.1.hi-r: of I'uddhist rclio ir.c.,;!.; bur i Iso of Yav>ivT> -ls thi allies of It is not Injp.cbable that king I at'.amitra des.bribed in the epic as taking a direct part in the war is iaeLitical

with the Tactrian king Demetrius (180-105 E.C.j and that P-hagad i',ta, who is described as the king of Yavanas ruling eve)- I\araka. in the west and as an old friend of the father of l'udhistira, is identical with the Bactrian king Apollodotus ('li"0]1C';. All scLohirs seem to agree in the viewr that the MaJiahiiarata has passed through at least three stages of development. In the beginning there were only old songs aboi.t t!;e ancient I'eud, referred to in the Vedas, between the two iieiglibonring tribes of the Kurus and Panchalas and the heroes who played a part in it. and these were handed down by word of mouth and recited in popular assemijiics or at great public .sacrifices. These disconiiected battle songs were firstly wrrk.T'd ;> by some poetic genius into a comjjaratively sher'.fp'.c !rf aa: at eight thou?Lir;d rso.3), describin.g the tragic fa'.e o." ulie Kuru race, who, with justice and virtue on their sidv; ;;.e.is! cd t'nro;igh the trtachery of Ihe victorious sons oi Pandn. The second development of the epic took .place i.i. coiineciion with the rcjwi'rj . sacrifice o: Pushyami;ra. Tlie victorious ,Paii."-,'K were represented i>. a favourable light, the Idcrdy sacrifices of tile Pr.ihniins were praised and the chsorva.vice of caste rules '.vas reestablished. In the first siage ap|)earod only the figure of Prahma as t!ie higi:ost god, bat ir! the soco;:d stage two other great gods, Siva and especialP-Vishnu, made their appearance. The Brahmins had net much reverence for the gods whom they could coerce by theii- ;,iaiUi-a^ an.d by the magic of their sacrifices, and put thf-mselves on a level cf equalit)- v.ith the gods as their terresia-ial repvesi ntatives. Yet they needed some deities with human traits to serVo as a set-off against the Buddha \-jni.'r,iti. d aimcbt as aged ""^cj.' found two sach deities in Agni and Vishnu. These tv.-o deities were directly connected "ith the sacrifice. " Agni is the lower half a,nd Vishn.L is rhe upper half of the sacrifice" Vishnu lorscoth is iho 'acri'lce,: by his strides he chtai ed for the gods that all pervading power whith now belcnas to them" "This whole Agni has ,:cw been completed: he now is the deity Rudra t'jxn him the gods bestowed the highest form, immortalit}. Fiandng he there stood longing for food. The gods were afraid cf him, lest he should hnrtth.em," In the jla!iLi"ho:-a',. the i're god is identified with Eudra. The production or fire frtm the firesticks and the apparent similarity o: the process lo sexual reproduction led to the worship of this god under the symbol of the power of propagation.

the *lingam*. lo the MahahJuirata vre are told that it is the organ of generation which is worshipped under the name of Mahadeva. The Brahr#ius thus raised the sacrifice to the status of a god, sometimes in the form of Vishnu and sometimes in the form of Siva, the euphemistic name of Agni, but always with the express purpose of exalting themselves. The mother Earth is questioned as to What cleanses the sina of a man leading the domestic mode of life. Mother Earth's plain answer is: "One should serve the Brahmins. A Brahmin by birth alone becomes an object of adoration with all creatures." In another place a Chandala performing austere penance is told that "this object of thy desire, the status of a Brahmin, which is the ioremost of everything, is incaj.able cf hcdi;g won by per.an3e." The jJa'i:':rata declares. "From the order of brute life one attains to the status o; humanity. If bora as a human being, he is sure to take birth as a Pukkasa or a Chandala. One having taken birth ia that sinful order of existence one has to wander in it for a. very lo.'.g time. j\^.ssing a period of one the .isind years in that order, one attains next to the status of a Sudra. In the Sudra order one has to wander thirty thousand years before one acquires tho status of a Vaisya. .After wandering for a time that is sixty times longer than what has been stated as the period of the Sudra existence, one attains to the Kshatriya order. After wandering for'a iime that is measured by multiplying the period last named ay two hundred, one becomes born in the race of such a llrahmin as lives by the profession oJ ariiis. After a time measured by multiplying the pericil last named by tliree hundred, one takes birth in the :a..je ir.Brdbudu i.ht.t i.j givu.; t(tho roci.ad,.:n of the gaiiatri and other mautras. After a time measured by multiplying the last named period by four hundred, one takes birth in the r.ice of such a Brt.hmin as is conversant with the A'edas and the scriptures." O.ily tho Brahmin as such, by subjugating joy and griei, desire and aversion, vanity and evil speech, can attain salvation So no one can attain salvation without being first born in "the race of such a Brahmin as is conversant with the Vedas and the scriptures." Thus the observance of the rules of caste was enforcedi on the basis of the theory ot transmigration of souls.

The dynast}- oi Pushyamitra came to an end with the death cf its last king, contrived by his Brahmin minister, Vasudeva. Vasudeva founded the Kanva dynasty. The last

cf the Kanvas was slain about 28 B.C. by one of the Andhra kings 01 Safcavahana family, who had their capital at Srikakulam on the lower course of the Kristina. Officially the Andlira kings were Brahminical Hindus, but they were not inimical to the Buddhists. One of tliem, Gantamiputra Sri Satakarni; prsed kb the champion ot both Brahmiriisal Hinduism aiul T-uddhism as against the creeds of thecasteless foreigners.. Sakas, Pallavas, and prided himself as being the defen.der of caste rules In the early decades of the first century after Christ- a tribe oi' Tatki nomads, called Yueh-chi, occupied the Baetrian lands south of the Oxns and settled down into a territorial nation, and in due ti-ne the chief of one of their sections, known as Kadphisesl, succeeded in becoming the soul monarch o: the Yiieb-chi natioii, .\fter consolidating])ib poivfr in Baotria he s ippr.-^ssed the Indo-(rreek and Indo-I'arthian i=rincipaliticto the west of the IndTis and extended his empire from the Ircntiers ot Persia to the Indus. .''le v.'as succeeded by his son. Ka>Iybisep II, who probably conquered tho Pa.'iab and a cousideraWe part of the Gangeiic plain, even as far as Benares, Kadphises II was succeeded by Kanishka in 7S A.D.; the monuments, ins criptions and coins rf his time prove that his authority extendel all over North-Western Ir.dia, probably as far south as the \'inuhyas, as -.veil as ihc vemcte regions hcynd the Pamir Pass Pe.netr;r in<: far into the interior o: im^ia and overcomiijg the king r.-oidini; at i'atalipntra, ho carriel away wit!-, him 'he fauiC"?. ':lhi.-t ;:atriarch, \svprsha. Being a fervent f'n •(•his: In- •.•otcd r. urof.t re lis lo.-.-cr in his capital. P'n-:;s!-,' ;u'I • ;-h.-.-n I'osbr.'.v n and cnvrV-ol a Buddhist con.sci! lit .J,ila.:-"bara. which preprre:! a grand 5-, ininary in Rarskrit v-.-rso of i'. foaebing.s <f the jvi:idba.

Th(Y1; h-chi co • jnesrs oi^ened up the ovi-rlanl commercial route botween India, nr.? the Bon:a-, ein-nre:-vl brought alx3ut n ccnt;!ct between In'i'n^, Zoroa'tria-i. Gnostic and Hellenistic religions. Either owin:: to an irte'-action bet-veen these reliaions, or to the desire to ohfeiin adherents from other relidious circles, or to a s;-o';tan-?o::= na* oral deveV-pnient. Buddhism took a new shape According to strict Biui-lb.ist teael'ing each man has to woH; out his own salvatioa v-bieh can i-: no w.-y he helned '-y snpern.tural ;raae. priestly absolution magical vlU'S. or sacrame.-tal ceremo'iies: the Buddha, th:,..gh v-iA.-r and greatar than a'! the gods, is a human being. "The ne Buddhism developed the belief in

the divinity of the Bnddha, in the efBcaey of faith and in savioii.r-bodhisats. The deification of the Buddha was the nat',\ral consequence of the elevation o: BudJha to a loftier spliere tha: that assigned to Erahma-Sahampathi, the lord of all. The trustful reverence shown by all his disciples towards their beloved teacher was not iar removed rrom religious adoration. In the 'liliii'la.pan'ia Nagasena Says that a man with a wicked nature, if he will only direct his thoughts earnestly towards Buddha, will not enter purgatory but will be reborn in lieaven. Similarly the .4?/i, 'i'rt_'/!i,'--?'/i!/a)!a Sntra of the newer Buddhism declares that the man who with .9teiidfast faith and quiet mind calls upon the name of Amita'oha for a period of only a week, or even for a single day, may face death with perfect calmness; for Amitabha, atten.ded by a host cf celestial r'odhisats, will assuredly appear before his dying eyes and will carry him av.-ay to be reborn in buds of lotus flowers in a paradise called. Svk'iai\iti where, 1-^arning the good law preached, to them $h\setminus$ - Amitabha, the celestial reflocsion of Gautama ^akya'nani, they grow happily according to their deserts and finally a'tain Nirvana As morals are irksome, a veligic; has. in order to be ;;0;.>nlar, to proffer a substitute for morals in the form of a mechanical dispecsatioi- from all sins cl commission and ondssion. We may therefc^re regard uith Or^o We'iker thntt!; new Buddhism is a natural development of the old I'lddlism. He says: "In strange contrast to the theoretical; nivorfality of t]i.e message of salvation there stood from the be;:iavdng the difficijlty wirh wldoh the redeeming k-ioivU^ Ige w; • *o be gained a difficult}- so great that in fact «,e Iv/ttion of Buddha could never be a salvation for all- esr •ei'.l'v ro' ;or the many small and poor and wea.k. As seen as ^he cnnseque'^ces were drawn from the universalit;.- rf tho -^alvtion which the Buddha, preachedi, the exclr.siveness rf *!ie pure doctrine must have been shattered: the pc'stnlates and. ileas musr, necessarily be levelled and accommoditel to the nee. Is of everyday people as soon as the sermon becomes serious with its • All ye', come unto me.* Is not this what happened? We need only point to the transformation of I lis .sirvana idea to illnstrare "by a classical ex;uiiple the prre^ss of craivorsicn which changed the pure teaching of Pnddn,: m^r- t popular re" don.,, A similar transformation of tile per.srn of the Buddh.a was the nfy;nral conseq.-.ence of this evol'.ticn '

The first great exponent of this new Buddhism was Asva-

gosha, the versatile patriarch of the Buddhist Church in the time of Xauishka. This Buddhist genius has left a small tract called *l'ajrasuchi*, which reveals to us the attitude of the later Buddhists towards the claims arrogated to themselves by the Brahiiiias. lie tries to disprove the supercilious claims o! the Brahmins from the standpoint of their own books. The argument of the *VajrasjicJil* may be summarised thus:

"(jranted that the Vedas, the Smritis and the Dharraa-sutras, are true and valid, and that all the teachings at variance with them are invalid, still the assertion that the Brahmin is the highest of the four castes can not be maintained. What is Brahminhood? Is it the iii« principle (Jyca), or descent (Jcji), or the body (k^* :jd), or le.uadng O'i-V-)> A' riiics [xichara,, or acts (!i:r.n.i).. or knowledge ot the v'edas?

"if tile life principle constituted Brahminhood, how could, as is stated in the Vedas, quadrupeds and other animals have become gods / According to tie MaJia.hhafata. seveu han.;er3 and teil dear of the hill_ of Kaliugala, a goose of the lake Idaaasasara, a Chakravaka ot Sh.iradvipa were born as Ijrahniins in Kurukshetra, and became very learned in the \'edas. in his/\'jiar/\';i7SitS(:; a ilanu says: "Whatever Brahmin learned in the lOur Vedas with their angas and uijaug.is receives gifts or fees from a Sudra, shall for twelve births be aa ass, ior sixty births a hog, and seventy births a dogd' Honce it is evident that it is not the life principle that constitutes Brahminhood.

" if irahminhoi d depended on descent or parentage, how could tias be reconciled with the statement of the Smriti that Ui.iny ^u.ads had no Urahmin luothers,' Achaia Maui was bern uf au elephant; Kesa Pingala of an owl; Suka Muni of a parrot; Kapha of a monkey; Sringa Eishi of a deer; Vyasa irom a fisher woman: Kausika Muni irom a female Sudra; L'arasara from a Chaudalihi; and Vasishta from i, SORUNIpet. \'isvamitra, though a Kshatriya., became the foauder of a h'.rahmin family Kanvayana Brahmins trace • their descent from Ajamidiha. a Kshatriya. The liwo sons of Nabhagarishta, who were Va, isyas, attained to the status of la'.ihniaraas. If one "i»rn of a Brahmin father or mother was a iir .hnun, then even the child of a slave (dasn or i.'a.s;\(^\) might become a Brahmin. li he alone was a Brahmin, whose /ather and mother were bo:h Brajjmins, then it must be established that the parents themselves were pure Brah-

mins. But the mothers of the parent race cf Brahmins were not, any of them, free from the suspicion of having committed adultery with Sudras: "In human society," says Yudisthira in the Slahahliarata (var.aparva), "it is difBcult to ascertain one's caste, because of promiscuous intercourse among the four orders. Men belonging to all the orders begot (promiscuously,) offspring upon women of all the orders. And of men, speech, sexual intercourse, birth and death are common. And to this the Eishis have borne testimony, by using at the beginning of a sacrifice such expressions as--'of what caste soever we may be, we celebrate the sacrifice'." Eurther, according to the. Maiuivadliarr.ihsastra a Brahmin who ate flesh lost instantly his rank; and also he who sold vvax or salt, or milk became a Sudra in three days If Brahniinhood depended on birth, how could it be lost by any acts however degrading? Could an eagle by alighting on the earth be turned into a crow?

"Is the body then the Brahmin? Then fire (Agni) would become the murderer of a Brahmin, when it consumed his corpse, and such also would be every one of the reia'tives of a Brahmin, who might consign his body to the flames. Again, every one born of a Brahmin, though his mother was a Sudra. v,-ould be a Brahmin, being the bone of the bone and flesh of the flesh of his father. But according to the Ma-'ja-bl'.arata the son that is begotten hy a Brahmin on a Sudra wife is called par, sava. implying one born of a corpse for a Sudra woman's body is as inauspicious as a corpse. Arr.in, the virtue of the holy acts sprung rrom tho body of a Brahmin is i^ot. according to hlrahmiaieal theories, destroyed hy the destruction of the body. Hence Brahminhood cannot c.nsist in the body.

"Is it learning that constitutes Brahminhood? If that were the case, many Sndras must have become Brahmins from the learning they possessed. Many Su.iras, even il/iy:'fc.i.5 were masters of the four Vedas, of \"'akaraaa and Jyotisha, of tho Mimamsa and the Vedanta, and of Samkhya, 3lyaya and A'aishoshika philosophies; yet not one of them was ever called a Brahmin. Aorcan acJiai-a and karn:a be said to constitute Brahminhood. For many Sudras are everywhere follovring practices appropriate to Ilrahmins, and are performing the severest and most laborious acts of piety.

"Why then sfcould the higher life be prohibited to the

legends, the so-called *.latakas*, as enduring infinite trials through numberless ages and births, foregoing the right to enter Nirvana for tha sole purpose of teaching mankind the way of salvation, liber.ition from sorrow and suffering, exercised a great charm. There was no such figure in Vedic Hinduism. Moreover, the sacred literature of the Buddhists was open to all without distinction of caste or creed. But the Brahminical Vedas should not even be heard by the non-dviga. The Buddhists had a *dJiannasast.-a* suited to all classes in the 3/aft('i\7s;«. Should not the Brahmins devise something to make up for these defects? No wonder that the *Mahahliai'dta* under went a recasting and attained its modern shape.

Whatever may have been the original motive of the M.iha'iiaraia, there can be no doubt that the existing version is the result of a revision at the hands of the Brahmins of the Gupta court for sectarian and caste purposes. "The fact tliat the MnJiahhorata is the same in Bengal and in Sonthrrn India, in the Panjab and throughout the Bekkhan, shows that it wa> carefully edited with a set purpose and is nc^. as the si,;):'rficial reader might imagine, a corpus of Bra'inioai litenturo strung together haphazardly in different :i-.n-if'ds cf t nio." In its present form it is not oilly an ere ciovaodia of mythology, pliilosopliy history and the sacred law, but it has also the status of a " fifth veda " and a "dharu;:;sastra," intended specially for the unlettered Sudras. ^^•hile the Vedas could not be repeated in the l^earivz r: the Sad.r.'.s. the 'Jaliahhcrata could be read avid explained to thiom. What was the necc:-sify fcr a jl(Hi Veda? •To coile with their Buddhist rivals the Ih-ahmins must liavo Rom.c hook vdiich could be accessible to the non-drlga. old *i-.ic tradition had grea!\(^{\) infly.ence on the popular mind. Mnc* didactic matter, calculated to impress upon 'he people and, 'heir kings the theories of the priestly caste was incorporat d into the epic, and a book which contained about twenty fci;r thiC'.;?":r.d verses was developed iiifo one containing a hu;:d;\d thousand verses. Thus the epic was made to assun)0 the character of a vast treatise on duty (Iharnin), in which, the divir.e origin and immutability of Brahminic iustit; dions. the eternity of the caste system, and the subordination of all to the sacerdotal class, were emphasised. Pur son.ie concessions were also made to the non-dtigu. It is declared that a Sudra may become asamskrito dvigali

hereafter and that he should be revered (senyah) like a re-«enerahe person, if he is "pare of heart and of subdued senses," since "not birth, nor sacrament, nor learning, nor stock fMu'ia^j'//) makes one regenerate, bat onl_v conduct " is the cause of regeneration. What Brahminism, pure and simple, teaches in regard to the Sudra is clear from tho Brahmanams and the Dharuiasutras, and we do not find this teaching even in the Upanishads. It is pure Buddhism taught as Brahminism. But it would be too much for the Brahmins to admit unreservedly, as Sakyamuni did, that all men could free themselves from sin and attain the stat.is of a Brahmin. That would be only setting a premium on t!ie teaching of the great Kshatriya reformer. Hence the-Va';n-I'haraL: openly exalts the Brahmins and covertly dissna les tho members of the other castes not to follow the teachings o; the Kshatriya Sakyamuni.

The influence of the Kshatriya teacher on the popul.ir mind was very great. He was regarded by all his followers as one born to take upon himself the sins of all mankind, "the endurer o: ills for the beneiit of existing beings". A new Kshatriya teacher had thorevore to be fabricated to dis^jiace Sakyamuni from the high regard shown to him. A deitv.'possessing Kshatriya traits, was ready to hand and he was anthvoijomorph.ised. .\gni and Indra were the favourite deiries of tbe Vedic pantheon. Agni was the Brabrain among the gods and was the household deity of the priests, ju later day.-, he came to be v,-orshi])ped as Rndra, who according to a Brahmana text ·iTas born out of a heap o.' tho most frisrVitful S'Ibstauces made by the gods to pn.nish the creator Trajapati fin-committing incest with his own daughter, their sister. The Kshatriyas among the gods were Indra. Varuna, Soma a;;d so on. indra is the most important amone: them, as is indicated hy the fact that about two hundred and lifty hymns ijelebrate his greatness, more than those devoted to any other i'od. He is the king of heaven. He gives victory to his people and is always ready to take in hand the cause of his Servants and i* therefore the good protector. He fights his -'reat battles for the deliverance of the waters, the cows, the bl>ouse3 of the gods, kept captive by the demons. As a god ci heaven he is also the dispenser of all good gifts, the author iO'.d preserver of all life. He can take many shapes He is i:ot always moral. He is an adulterer and is not above practising deceitful wiles even .without the justification of a good

end. Vishnu is Indra's friend and ally; lie is Upeudra. We read in the Brahmanams; "See you the deeds of Vishnu, 's hereby he beheld the sacred ordinances, Indra's a Uied iriend. " indra, forsooth, is the deity of the sacrifice, and the Sacrificial stake belongs to Vishnu." "And as to why the oblation is one tor ladra and Vishnu, it is because fndra raisej the thunderbolt and Vishnu stood by him." "The Riks and Samans are Indra, and the Yajus are Vishnn. And b" means of these I'aj'is they, as it were, bring forward that Vishnu, the sacrifice." ".\gni is the lower half and Vishnu is the upper halt of the sacrifice." "Indra and Agni are the whole universe." "Indra is the self (soul) of the sacrifice " " Xow Indra and Agni were created as the Brahmin and the Kshatra: the Brahmin was .^gni and the lisha'ra Indra. When creaied the t.vo svere separate: They spoke, 'Whilst being thus, wo shall be -.nable to produce creatures: let ns both become one form?' The two became o.e form. ' "-\ow he -.vho is this Vishnn is the sacrifice." .I'he identificiition of Vishnu with Indra is n- t difilcult. Vasndova and Govinda are tlie names ot Indra that were transferred to Vishnu. In the Bij; Veda epithet (lopa: protector oc cows) is applied to Vishnu, and with this are connected the names Govinda Gopala (iopendra. Accor.iin: to the s;iaie Veda the lii:rhest step of Vishnu is tbe h veiling of the many horned swiftly movin cows.' The itself says: •. Assumin; - the form o; tlie s;n

<\ii3hn s head). V cover the n.niverse with niy rays. And bec;i.,use [a:n ttm home of ail creannres, therefore am I called by Iho, nime of Vns.deva." In the llodhayana Dharmasntra '.'isim: is called (iovinda and Bamolara. The ancient worship of indra is referred to in Sanskrit and Tamil literature. In ;.'auini there is a reference fio the ancient worshii Oi .irjnna which is the mystic name of Indra. Mei;asth.'ni.>3 speaks of the worship of Heraklea, a'l.l no Brahminic deity reBenibles Hercules more than indra, whose achievements bear iire.at resemblance to some of the twelve "labours" of tho torn.ier. (Jut of the rain-t;i%'ing god Indra WAS evolved tho dark blue god Krishna and invested with^11 the qualities of Mara, the enemy of P>uddha.

Adolf Holtzmann asks: '^hat fatality impelled the Indians to elevate such a character into an incarnatior. of the supreme deity? Similarly Prof. A. B. Keith asks: "How comes it that we have in the Epic the picture of the most immoral Krishna, a cunning trickster, the evil

genius of Arjima anl the Pandavas? In the tribal god of a rude agrio.hsurdl or pastoral people these traits do not surprise greatly, for maa makes gods in his own image, but vvhau ,ia exu-aordiu.a-y late for the preacher of a pure and ciev.ited iaL;no:heisia. ' The auswar is found ia tho foilowing iakeu from tihe liha^'acat i Pnrau i: The transgression of vir:,io an 1 the dari.ig acts which ara witnessed in superior beings must not be charged as faults to these glorious persons \vx. lot >0 one other than a sa-\text{ierior being ever} even in ttio.ignt practise the same—Tae word of superior beings is tr.ie, and so also their coaduct is sometimes; lata wise man observe Dueir comuiaad whicli is right. Since Aianis (iro ancoirroaoa and aJt as they please. Iiovv can there Ud any restraint upon him (the sjarcnia deity; when be has voluulidly ;i=.iu.ned a body.'" So tho iaoaruatio.i of the sipreino .udtv, sacgh preaoiiiag iii'jrahty, is not expecudd to act morally ia accorda.ice with his te.icnings. The iiraiimin, •'ding aa o^jporta.d.it, has never set .ni.uh store by morality, ile could always resort to cue casaistry of o-i>aU'i(i",,i-%. Jlera '•'as aa eaemy who ui-.ist be circ i;nvaat,ed so aeb,,),v. .V, ;Ishatriya m.ist bs raised to the ocsildo i r.f a d'd;v, ,iad tho lieas adopted from the eiiojiy mis-, '\' so adapted i I tr\:is-.aiuted as to make them look ta.lige.iyis 1 ori^i.iai. £aa . juddhists regard a Ihi as a m.i j bor; to sava th« h.iiu.ia race from .lipeaiing ram, wb^.'nrtver sia a.id igaoranoc g lia the upper hand in this world, fa tha », l-ih-ifin -..pu > iarikani, a sacred book of the dlihayaaa ihidlhiots, the Il.i.ldlu says: I am tiie Tasbagit-a. the Lor J, who h.vs no s,ip.;rior, ,vbu ppears ia thn world lo s ive." -Ji ailariV tvrishaa is ,iia ia to say; "Wht'.ievor t'aor.' is a decay of I'lar.iM and there is a rise of a/.'ia/'/ifi, then I maiufosti iaysv.d:. Por the protection OL the ri.;htoo-;s ail tho destruction of the -larigbteoas, for tho liriu ostaliiishmeat of /.'Vr.r.'jia Lain born iii every age." Dhd.nna does not here mean religion ia a Christian or jjuddhistic sen-e bat only in a Brahminio sense As •i.i.nkara points oat, religion here mea'-s oadi\' sjca reagioa is is i i iicated by castes a.il reli^iois or lers In the proeai t,; nis commentary on the B-iagara-. 'giiit Samkara s-iys: •' Whea, "•.viag to the ascendancy of .lesire ;;i its voutries. reli^ioa vas overpov.-ered by irrdigion, cause 1 by tho .leere.jiag fae.utv of discrimination, then it wiis the (uagiuil Cr.>it.jr I U'lzri-i} Vishau, kno.vu as .larayana, desirous of maiataiaiag order sn the universe, iucaruated himself as Krishna, begotisea

Devaki by Vasadeva, for the preservation of the 'earthly Brahmana', of the class of Brahmins on the earth. For it vras by the preservation of the class of Brahmins that the Vedic religion conld he preserved, since on that class all distinctions of caste and religious orders depended." It is therefore natural that, against the Kshatriya teacher who denounced tho system of castes and the superiority of the born-priest, the Brahmins should set up another Kshatriya, though he be only an anthropomorphised god, to teach the Hindus to worslip tho Brahmins and follow the rules of caste.

In the mouth of this god Krishna, who is identified in the Matsj/a Purano. with Kama, are put the ideals contained in the Bhagava'Igita. which is described as the essence of all sastras and all UpanishoJs (sarvasastrasara, siirvai'pnnisha"Sorr) and has been given the status of an Upanishad under the name of iritovavisha't. While the real I'panishads. which form a part of the Vedas. cannot be read or heard by the Sndra, this Gitopf •lishdd which forms T part of the pan'ch.o.ina rcda can be read and heard by him. The burden of this Song of the Exalted One" is apparently the exhortation to do one s duty in this life without attacb.ment. But underlyint' tliis overt exhortation to do ones own duty, to be true to oneself, not to avoid the work which has been ordained for each by nature, there is a defence of the system of castes. The situation in which, the defence of caste is advanced is well chosen. The hostile armies of the Pandavas and the Kauravas are f'cing each oth.er in the field of Knrukshetra. which Inid already become famous as the place where tbe •.••ods hnd])erforraed a great saeri'ice. Arjuna. tbe famous archer of the Pandavas. who bad already subdued the whole of Jamhndvina, catches siglit of his g-andfather J-lhishnia. his teacher F-rt na. nno others whose lives be valued in the army of the fuoniy. The thought of kiUini; them shocks bin; and he let= his bow a'ld arrows fall, nreparing rather to die than fight n:uler such conditions. His clarioteer Krishna admonishes him to (hscharge his duty So the god in human form, demands the fulfilment cf duty. But what is ones duty? How is Arjuv.a to decide between the comparative claims of conflicting duties".' In the mind of Arjuna there is a conflict of duties, a conllict between the dictates of his conscience and the duty imposed by caste rules Lord I uddha taught that every one must decide for himself according to the best dictates of his reason and conscience what his duty shall be

But Sri Krishna tells Arjuna not to give way to the noble sentiments of love and affection which move him to desist from fighting but to follow the duty imposed on him as a Kshatriya, just in the same manner as Saml<ara defends the kiUing of animals in sacrifices on the ground that such killing is enjoined by the Vedas. although it maj- be opposed to the sentiment of humanity. Ko doubt an attempt is made to give the system of castes a more tenable basis. Bor the old doctrine that to attain salvation the mem'iers of the other castes should first become Brahmins hy going through a series of births, the irita substitutes a new doctrine that "man attains Salvation, devoted each to his ova duty " and that the duties of Brahmins, Kshatriyas, Vaisyas and Sndras are determined by their natural qualities. • The fo.ir-fold c isces wore instituted by uie according to the disfctib-itioa of energies (^.,';nia) and actions (irt/-y/irtj." "Or Ilrahnains and Kshatriyas and Vaisyas, as also of Sudras, the .lutiea are divided according to the qualities born of nature." 3jteni..y. self-restraint, iiusterity, purity, forgiveness, and also uprightness, knowledge, experience, faith-those are the duties or the Brahmanas, born of nature." -'Bravery, boldness, fortitude, dexterity, and also not fleeing from battle, generosity and lordliness are the duties of Kshatriyas, bom of nature." 'Ploughing, cattle rearing, and trade are the duties of Vaisyas, born of nature; the duty of the Sudra which consists in service is also born of nature." "iJevoted each to his duty, man attains prefection." "Better one s own dhafiua, destitute of merit, than tha >iharhij,oi another well periormed. Bo who does the duty ordained by his r, va nature iicirs no sin." "Nature-born duty, though faulty, one ought not to -bandou, for undertaking to do another s duty is fra.ig'ut with evil h'.a < iha:' "And **would** it be well for me to he the author of the confusion of castes and destroy these beings?" 'Those men w'nose steps are not guided by t'ae family or Caste iincrnia, stray of a truth into the darkness of hell and rarely set out of it.' "So, having an eye to the schdarity cf society, thoushouldst perform thy duty." "As the ignorant act from attachment to action, so should the wise act without attachiucut to preserve the solidarity of society. ' "Let no •-iso man uasoctie the minds of ignorant people att?.ched to letion. • It is evident from these passages that tha Giid aims covertly to support the domination and prestige of the Ijrahmin class, while appearing to provide for the wants •which Buddhism satisfied. In Buddhism only works of unselfish love, characterised by absolute detachment"((2'^\'\'-5^iA'. can lead to iiii-r,ij:ix "Tho world is fettered by works," says the ('i^a. save in the work that has for its end the sacrifice "Work to this end do thou fulfil. O son of Kuntifree from attachment.' AVhatsoever is noble and sublime in the (rita is wliat "nraliminism has freely borrowed from its rival and utilised for its own purposes, especially to prevent the Sudras frona secedin'i from their old faith The rest is a conplonierate of i-epetitioi".p. contradictions, absurdities, the result of an nsnccessful attempt to reconcile al! phases of orthodox opinion.

The emp'isis laid in the Bhngara iiritn onkillin, as a duty calls to n.i.-.d the followin;;;' tradition that the ("bin.ese traveller Yuan Chwan heard concernin. Pharinaksbetra. otherwise called Kur-1:sherra. — Th" five Indies" were once divided between two srverei :ns who fou_'ht for mastery invadinj- eacli other's (e>-ritory and koe:.iin • up m ceasin.' war. At len,'tb in order to settle the questioni of snneriority. and so uive)>eace to their S'; bjects, the kin ;s a reed between themselves to have a c'rcisive action. Br.t their subjects were dissatisfied and nfu.si-1 to obey their kinds' commands. Thereupon the kini- I'cf that part of India which incV-.ded Thanesvar) thor.u.ht cf an expedient. Seeing it was usples; to let bis subjects have a voice in bis proprsals ai-d kncvin.: that the people would he infinenced by tln' supernatiiral he secretly sent a roll of silk to a clever Brahmin, ccmmanclin-' him to come to the nalace. On his arrival there the Brabffiio was kept in the iru.er chand-ier. and there he composed ("that is. by the kin., s insjjiraHoni a Dharnias\.tra .'tb:!" is. a treatise o • duty'. This book the kin • tlien hid in a rock Cave, where it rema'-.^t^d for several years until ve-etatior. covered the spot. Then one morniiiL' the king informed his ministers at an audience that he had been enli'.hte'^ed by Indrfi. who trhl bim in a dream about aii inspired book hidden in a cert:Mn hid. The bcok was bron,-bt forth, and <-f[icial = and people were e-raptn-ed. By t'ue kin u t- orders tlie contents of the script-re were mnde known to all and the sum of them was briefly this.

•• Life and death are a shoreless oceaii with **ebb** and flow in endless alternation: intelligent creatures can not save themselves from **the** eddies in which they are immersed. I have au admirable device for saving them from their woes

and it is this. - Here we have 200 li round this city the place of merit for generations of the ancient sovereigns, but as its evidences have been effaced in the long lapse of time, people have ceased to reflect on the efBcaey of the place, and so have been srbmerg-ed in the ocean ot misery- with no one to save them from perishing. Now all who, being wise go into battle and die fighting, will be reborn among men: slaving many they will be innocent and will !eceive divine blessings : obedient urand children and filial children servinur their parents while sojonrnin; in this district will obtain infinite happiness. As the meritorio-'S service is little and the reward it hrin-rs great, why miss this opport'-nity'.' Once the himan body is lost there are three states of dark oblivion; hence every human being should be diligent in makinr rood hi-r>,M, thus all who enrage in battle will look on death as a ret-orly home. -Then thy king ordered an enrolment cf heroes for battle aid an engagement took place on this gro. nd. The bodies of those killed in battle were strewn about in cont ised masses, so great was the number of the slain, and the h",,!e skeletons of these heroes still cover the district which pop^,lar tradition calls die place of Reliiio;s Merit." Thomas Waters, from whose translation of Yiian Chwana's Siyuki this passa.'e has been taken remark.s that it reads like an extract from the Bhagavadgita." Here prtbably lies the reason of the incorporation of the BhagavCiigitain the revised version ofthe 'Ma'iahijarata

The gospel of duty has been preached very often. A gospel of duty devoid oi content can not have any practical value. The sense of duty must get its sulijeot matter somewhere, ft is but natural that a gcspel of dr.ty seeking its content should readily lend itself to che idealization an 1 consecration ot such specific duties as the existing social order might prescribe. In a society subject to the regime of castes what caste commands becomes the congenial outer content of a purely inner sensH of duty Ideal justice comes to be treated as taking a practical shape in the form ot caste. Caste is thus made to represent exactly the incarnalion of ideal law. To him who abides strictly by what caste imposes on him are promised the benefits of the observance of aa ideal law. We might even say that caste demands self-sacrifice ia so far as it constrains one to act. not according to ones natural aptitudes or desires, but according to the caste in which one is born. This self-sacrifice is devotion to the kingdom of the

Absolute on earth. Hence the necessity of a philosophy of the Absolute as a supporting back-ground for this practical philosophy. Any philosophy which is not consistently a posteriori will always traftic in Absolutes, however much they may differ in form. But let us not forget that pb.ilosophical absolutism is no less dangerous than political absolutism. Philosophical absolutism has no regard for happiness as a test of action, and those that profess it have an unfortunate way of living up to their principles by making others unhappy. In all absolutist philosophies the good of society appears in the whole rather than in the individuals taken severally. The high role played by the society as a whole is laken as compensating the misery of individuals. The whole society dlictates functions to every individual, and the law of justice is that he should do what his special duty demands, however hard or humble may be the place so assigned. Since in the end the individviai's true nature lies heyoud his visible self, any claim to belter oneself beccraes blasphemy. Since the stuimniin iionnm consists in renic vinu' the illusion (maya) which makes it seem unaccomplishied. each individual must find by asceticism and renunciation his true sphere and genuine reality in the Absolute Self. Thus all incentive to reform and proerress is cut off at the very root, and a jn.stification is provided tor casto inequalities, slavery and she ignorance and prostration of the m,T,sses. All absolutist philosophies, owing to tue emphasis they lay on the relation between the individual life and the universal life, tend to withdraw men from social relations. In fact, the general effect of absolutist philoso,-hics on the world has been o' mainly to sap intellectual and moral sincerity, to excuse men in their consciences for professing beliefs which on the meaning ordinarily attached to them they do not hold, to soften the edge of all hard contrasts between right and wrong, truth and falsity, to throw a gloss over stupidity and prejudice and caste and tradition, to weaken the basis of reason and disincline men to the searching analysis of their habitual ways of thinking." AU the six orthodox systems of Hindu philosophy, namely, Samkhya. Yoga. Myaya. Vaiseshika. Mimamsa and Vedauta,, maintain some form of Absolute or Absolutes, and therefore overtly or covertly suppiort the system of castes.

Philosophical absolutism is an absurdity. The Absolute

is defined as something out of relation to Icnown things. How could any such existence be established by reasoning? Existence itself means the capacity of producing an effect and implies therefore relation to other things. We know nothing absolute; all is relative. Nothing is even cognisable, thinkable, expressible which is not a relation. Language itself is a system of relations. There is no action without the relation of cause and eiTect. of antecedent and consequent. All abstiactiou implies relation. There is no time without relation bety, een two phenomena. There is no space without a body in space. There is no reality without someone capah.e of perc^^iving it. Two terms are always necessary. Even when L think of myself, my sentiments, my seusaiious, there is al.vays something that is not 1. If I shonbi desire to know myself pure and simple freed of all foreign eleiients, it would be necessary to isolate myself from ail my sensations and sentiments, from all that which, in my ibo.j-hts ha-^ Ian u vie for its origin. Cons'd.=r a man born biin.l deaf inc-i^.pabie of tactile sensation, a;d hence deprivoii of all relation with the material wond and his feiiow beings Such a man, not to speak of his bein-; conceivable, would know nothing; in return he would liave absolute knowledge, that of identity between the knoning subject and the object kn<;\\u: it is I knowinj; 1. o ;i;a is tbe .\'isolate of metaphysics. The Absolute at first is the I. then it is I penetratiu.g into all thiius, becomia., their conscic u^ness and finally knowing them all as the I knc.vg itself by complete identification with all. . ': M/i;uu..,-/(a, *taiva*,,*a*^*U* By this ii n.'-ica' operation mm is s m'>oseH to apnrf-bend the basis of ah things, the ibing in itself. This operation, which is a spt-ciai kind of vertigo or au.'obypnosis for the suppression of cou-sciousness. is i>:uled Yoga and is d<:'scribed in the Bhagaco. Jgita thus: • A devotee renndning in a secluded place bhouKI always devcre his mind to contemplation, alone with hi.-'mind, sel: restrained iviihout any expecia'ions and witho it any concern, fixing his seat firmly in a clean spot, neither too hi "h nor too low aud spreading over it a piece of cloth, deer skin and hus-i _rass. there seated in one spot and his mind liH-A on cue poi.i; and restrai'ung mind and senses, one sin,..hi practise coutempiation for the pnrifieiMon ci his Solf holding his body bead and neck piarfectly still and fixing his eyes on the tip of bia nose and without looking in any direction. • The disappearance of cognition thereby produced

is regarded as absorption of consciousness into the Absobite (sakshatkara, samr/agdarsana). One can easUy lapse from consciousness into unconsciousness, but to dn.b nescience as super-consciousness and rank it as something above consciousness capable of revealing the underlyicir nature oi all thim's, is only to make oneself proof against criticism at the sacrifice of the right to a respectful hearing.

In the Giia an attempt is made to connect a man's beliefs, sentiments, modes of life and actions with the Samkhya theory of tlie three ,i^unos. The three gunas are named sattva, rajas and <a;);rts. Though they are not present in their entirety anywhere, there is no part of the universe •where at least a minimum of these is not to be found. In the period of dissolution of the universe they slumber. But the actions of 507f/.s, not recompensed in the previous age of the universe, awakentbern intobeinga'.; dmake them proceedupona new evolution. When in the course of evolution human beings sind particidar products have come into existence, the three gunas maintain throughout the universe an unceasing struggle for supremacy. If the several constituents are allowed to develop freely, soitvi is manifestetl in the world of objects as light a;:d buoyancy and in man as virtue, benevolence, happiness, cheer{uh:ess. kc; rajas is manifested as force and movement in the world of objects and in man as every kind of suffering, anxiety, passion, v,!okodness. ka, and also as ambition, effort and activity: iaihas is ma:iifested in the objective world as lu-aviness, rigidity a!id d.vrk'ess, and in man aS cowardice, fear, stnoidity, sloth, itc .\ocording to this theory sattva predominates in the world of the gods, rajas in that of men,/liHifl.s in that of animals, plants and minerals. Mankind also are classified into their divisons. Brahmin, Kshatriya, Vysia, Sudra according to the predominance of one cf these 'g"M;<76-- "There is no being on earrh, cr again in heaven among the i/evas that can be free from these three g7inas born of prakriti. Of Brahmins, Kshatriyas and Vaisyas, as also of Sudras, the duties are divided according to the qualities born of nature. Serenity, self restraint austerity, purity, foraiveness. and also uprightness, knowledge, experience, faith—these are the duties of the Brahmin, horn of nature T.ravery, boldness, fortitude, dexterity, and also not living from battle, generosity and loneliness are the duties of Kshatriyas, born of nature Ploughing, cattlerearing and trade are the duties of Vaisyas, born of nature; the duty of the Sudra which consists in service is also boraof nature. Devoted each to his own duty, man attains perfection." One is a Brahmin, Kshatriya, Vaisya, or Sudra not by training but by natural endowment. Consequently the status of a man in the scale of caste is determined by birth and cannot be altered. As the theory of *gunas* traces the characteristics of men to physical causes, it must naturally lead to fatalism and asceticism. The whole theory ia a fanciful hypothesis in which no part can find any support, in modern science.

The struggle between Brahminism and Buddhism ia really a struggle for the maintenance of the rule of caste and the supremacy of the Brahmin. Though according to the Brahminical theories the Kshatriya and Vaisya share with the Brahmin the privilege of reading the Veda, yet that privilege extends only so far as the Veda is taught and explained to them by their Brahmin preceptor. To the Brahmin alone belongs the right of teaching and expounding the sacred texts. Hence in the view of the Brahmins the greatest sin of Sakyamuni was that, he, being a Kshatriya, transgressed the duties of his own class by assumins the function of a preceptor and the right to receive gifts, which the Brahmins regarded as their exclusive nrivilege; and worse still he instructed the members of the fourth c'iste v.diom the Brahmins placed outside the pale of instructiou. This is exactly the charge which Kumarila Bhatta brings against the Buddha in his '!-'a-it-".v.i,rtiJ;.a. "What confidence can we have." says Kamarila. "'that one who being a Kshatriya, transgressed the duties of bis own order and assumed the function ol a teacher and the right to receive presents would inculcate a grave system of duty? For it has been said; "Let every man avoid a man who practises acts destructive of future happiness. How could he who ruins himself be of any benefit?' .\nd yet this very transgression of Buddha and his followers is conceived of as being a featlier in his cap; since bn spoke thus: 'Let all the evils resulting from the gin of Kaliyiga fall toon me; and let the world be redeemed.' Thus ab;indo dng the duties of a Kshatriya, which are beneficial to the world, assumincr the function of a teacher which belongs only to the Brahmins and instructing men out of the pale in duty enjoined to the Brahmins, he sought to do a kindness to others, while consenting to violate his own obligations; and for such merits

as these he is praised! And who follow his instructions, acting in contravention of the prescriptions of the *SnUi* and *S7)irUi*. are notorious for their erroneous practices."

In the Sanliaravijaya, ascribed to iladhava, we are told that the gods, strongly impressed with the religious corruption prevalent in the world, repaired to Kailasa and addressed Mahadeva thus: "The earth is now overcrowded by the Bouddhas, who put faith in the doctrines of Buddha and vilify the orthodox philosophies. The enemies of Brahminism hate the regularities of caste and orders, and speak of the Vedic texts as merely meant as livelihood for the priests. No man ever performs the aandhya and other ceremonies, nor the satnnyasa. AU are become heretics. They close their ears immediately on hearing any one speakiiig of sacrifices. How then can religious rites go on, how can we enjoy the fruit of sacrifices? What religious text is there, referring exclusively to the supreme being, that has not been maided hy the besotted Bouddhsis? Other systems, too, there are on earth, full of mischief, to which men resort and come to misery. Therefore do you destroy all wicked people, and for the protection of mankind, establish the Vedic system so that the world may become happy" Mahadeva promised to grant the prayer of the gods, and by way of commencing work at once addressed himself to his son Kartikeya. Mahadeva told Kartikeya that the gods Vishnu and Sesha had already become incarnate for the purpose of saving the Qpasaoa Kanda from destruction; that he himself proposed to appear on earth as Saukaracharva to rescue the Gnana Kanda, but before he did so Kartikeya sliould take upon himself the human form and preserve the Karma Kanda. He instructed Kartikeya thus: "Descending to the earth, fix all regulations in accordance with the Vedas, after evercoming all Sangatas (Bonddhas) who are enemies of the teaching of the Vedas. And in order to help you I'rahmadera will become a Brahmin Maudana and Indra a king named Sudhanvan." Alter the preliminary arrangements are concluded in heaven, the scene changes to the earth and we are told that Indra becomes a model king in this world and Kartikej-a appears at his court as Kumarila Bhatta - 'having acquired fame in elucidating the true teaching of the Vedas expounded in the Sutras of Jaimini and defeats the Saugatas in argument. But to prove the truth of the doctrine he preached, he falls down a steep hill unhurt and converts a snake into Vishnu. Then the king is satis-

fied and iaanes an order for the destruction of the Bauddhas. About this king Sudhanvan Dr. G. G Pope says that the Tamil equivalent of this name fstrong bow or good bow I is Val-vil-ori or Athan-ori, one of the seven generous celebrated chieftains of the old Tamil lyrics. Those lyrics date generally from the fourth to the eighth century A.D., and therefore embrace the period of Kumarilabhatta. It is just possible, therefore, that Val-vil-ori and Sudhanvan may be identical, though we have no evidence to support the theory. This king was according to the poems a mighty hunter, hbs chief residence being a hill called Kolli, on the Malabar coast, a place from which the Chera kings take one of their titles. In this connection it may be noted that the Kerala Utpatii states that the Buddhists -were driven out of Kerabi. by Kumarila Bhatta, so that the locality in question tallies with both legends.

To maintain his supremacy the Brabmin has resorted to all means. Wherever he had special royal patronage, the casteless Buddhists were persecuted. We have already referred to the destruction of many monasteries by king Pushyamitra. According to the Buddhist tradition there were three persecutions of the faith between the times of TSlagarjuna and Asangha. During the reign, cf Skand gupta the Hun deluge burst upon India. Though their first assault was repelled by Skandagupta (A.D. 4!>.".j, yetthesiupta empire finally succumbed to its foes. The Huns under the leadership of Toramana subjugated the north-west and made S-dkala in the Panjab their capital. Toramana was succoedgd by Mihirakula. Mihirakula was a worshipper cf demons a,id their head Siva. He bitterly and cruelly perseeure. the T'ud. Ihist monks, destroyed the Buddhist st:-'i>aA and mortasteries and plundered them of their tre.'.sures Xarasim^iL.gupta Baladitya, who is described by Yuan Chv/ang to be an ardent Buddhist, seems to have overthrown the Huns in a doaisive battle and driven Mihirvkula to take refuge in Kashmir. .After this dispersion of the Huns there is a gap in our knowledge for a century till we come to the reign o: Harsh i Siladitya. Harsha Vardhana was a staunch supporter of Buddhism, and his sister, after the death of her husband, became a Buddhist hiiiksnuni. King Harsha prohibited the slaughter of all living creatures within his'dominions and enforc-gd all his pec^ile to abstain from flesh-eating, himself setting the example

The partiality for a vegetarian diet which oharaoterises the Hindu of the piesent day is the result of the work of Asoka and Siladitya. Brahminism has had no share in it. In all Brahminical sacrifices the remains of the animal slaughtered had to be eaten. Manu declaj-es that the man who, having in due form performed a (vui.tJmparka or other; rite, fails to eat flesh meat, will be doomed to be born an animal for twenty generations. The Maha'.iiarata bears testimony to the high value of flesh as an article of diet. Bloody offerings are still common in many of the temples of i\orthern India. Nevertheless, we find in the mouth of everj' Hindu the well-known baying ahimsa paramo Jharmaii. How has this change been brought about'.' Y,'o can jiot say that it is wholly due to a natural disposi ion to beuevc>lence. Bor we find a learned and thonghtu;! Brahmin like Samkara defending the jy,,!,if'htoii.a sacrifice as a holy act, theiUgJi it iuvoives the shedding of blocd, on the ground that the sacrifice Is enjoined by the \'eeas as a duty. The real reason of the chauge of feeling towards bloody sacrifices is given by the author of the :niai/,i. i^in.lim. This writer says: "The slaughter of large bulL- and large sheep for Brahmins versed in the Vedas, should not be effected being detested by the public, further tho ride, let a co v fit tor offering tn Jlitra and Varuna, or a, barren cow, cr one that has ceased to bear after first calving bu sacrif;cctl, is duly ordained, but such sacrifice, being opposed to public feeling, could not be performed." could have been insturmental in producing this revulsion of public ;ei. lii:g agair.st tho ordina.ices o: the Vedas, were it not tiic ui uunciation of the slaughter of animals by such Buduhist kings as Asoka and .rlarsha Siladitya'.' The Buddhist .ippc '.; tC' humanity was so strong that it created :i horror against the vain sacrifice of animal life, which even a belief in ;hc authority of the Vedas and the Smritis could

Like other Buddhist kings Harsha Siladitya was a liberal patron ct ether religiciis Yuan Cdiwang has given an account ot the Jre at 1-uddhist festival at Kancuj in A.i). to which all the le.matories ot the empire '.vere summoned. The festival at Kano j was foUowedt by another great ceremony at .i-huyaga v.here the lung gave ail his wealth to the poor an'i those devoted to religion. On the first day an image of the Buddha was set up, on the second day that of the sun, and on the third day that ot Siva, an indication that a fusion was

gradually taking place between Buddbiam and other religions, In the distribution of gitt-; the Buddhist hhiksJins took precedence. Aicer them the Brahmins were honoured, then came the -Jaius and other sect-iries for their share, and lastly the wants of the poor and destitute .vere satisfied. The favours bastowed by king Harsha on the Buddhists appear to have excited tlie jealousy or tle Brahmins so that they not only set fire to the temporary lofty tower built foE-the image of the Buddha at Kano.ij, but also made au attempt on the king's life, 'iaau Ghwaug states that the investigation chat followed vhese two untoward incidents led to the 'oanishment oi five hundred Brahmins convicted of be-ing accoai|ilices. The enemy of Harsha, Sisanka, Sing of Western Bengal, did his best to extirpate Buddhism. Ha uprooted tha sacrei Bo-tree at BudlhaGaya and laid waste the adjoi ing sanctuaries and nionasjeries. 'Jri/nodox Brah nmism seized , the opportunity oi ilarsha's death o .nsm-t its politijal supremacy. Arjuna (or Arnnasai, ou3 oi ITirsha's ministars, set aside the claims of Harsha's family and put him-elf oa the throne. Aruaasa ins ilted an 1 maltrnicolVn:i envoy from the court of China where Baddhism -.vas in the asee i iant. But Wang-hia; en tse, the lealer of tho mission, togeth.er with his deputy, esjipnd to .s-^pa,!, anl with t!io Imlpo: armies placa.l at his disposal by tli-3 ouddhist kings of .Njpal and Tibet, soon overraii Magadha and made .\caaa3a captive and returned to China.

Tbe Gupta prmojs who ruled in Bast Migadha after r.ba braak up of ilarsha s empire were s.iccaedel by tha i^ala k.ngs -.vno .vure devmt fjuddhists. hiika all ze ilous Gildhists the :/':iia kings wera very tolerant of ot ler rjli,;ioi:s .i,ai even bas^oA-el gifts upon the Brahmins. Bat the .ieua kings, who re:t away tha eastern portion ot tile t'ala territory, v-rra intolerant. A century aftar Yua i Ghwang visita.l India, tha Brih.uius -.vera l^rought to Bengal with the object of spreading iJrahminism a id siipprassi.ig its great rival Tb-jSm.i kings wore the great allies of the .Srahiuins iu their e'i laavours to see ire both these objects. Tha Seui kings us.> 1 to grant lands to Brihmins in perpatuity in cose pr.>xi;nity to Buddhist monasteries. The Buddhists ware riliciiel m poetic compositions liud execrata.l ia public. Tha vary sight ot a i->udd!iist w.is consi lerei M occasion tor .larformbi^ expiatory caramoaies. Ballala Sana aitorcaltho ruias or caste and gave succour to LvtiLinism. .Ia drovo avav tja Sonar Baniaa, who were Buddhists, from his dominions. Those who rfjinained in Bengal were degraded and Brahmins were prohibited from teaching them and offi&iating in their religious ceromoniea. Both the Pala and Sena dynasties were hrought to a sudden end hy Mohammed Bhakhtiyar Khilji. All the intellectual followers of Buddhism were either massacred or compelled to fly away from the country. Eudcihism was practically stamped out from Bengal. Owing to the Mohammedan invasion the Brahmins who lived on the lands granted co them by the Bala and Sena kiijgs lost their lands and other sources of income. They were co:npelled from this time to extend their activity as priests. Such of the Buddhists as consented to become thoir subeiissive followers were admitted by the Brahmins into tin' fold of Hindu society and called the ;(artXS(XK/;ir, or the new branch. Those that tried to maintain a separate existence were declarod(i;n!e.ia/-,';' or untouchable classes. A large number of tho Buddhists, like so many lambs without a shephered, were coavertud to Islam either by rorce or by persuasion. It is not improbible that the social philosophy of the Prophet of Islam which, like the teachings of the i>uddha, gives all helicvors an equal spiritual status, better suited the lluddhists than ISrahaiiaism which teaches that "the wealth tliaS is stolea. by the Bralirain tends to well-being in tho next life, the wealth tliat is given to tho Sudra tends only to hell." and that "iiauior.il Brahmins are to be worshipped, but not Sudras though sui)diving tVieir passions . as the cow that eats things not ;c be oaten is better thai! the sow of good iarent."

How i'luudhism ffred under Brahminic sway is best sho'wii b}' it. study of the i'uddhisi connaanity in .\epal. The Ge.rkha government throws its favours and inthiance on the side of fine llindns. The casteless Baddhi=ts are ostracised as iUoch--atui/a and put outside the pale of the J^rahmi: Ic conimuaity. The king acting under the advice of the Brahnnns may make some particular families or classes into clean castes. In N'epal at the present time there exists among the Eudlhists a sort of distinction between the priestly and the non-priestly occupations. But the distinction is not so pr^aiourced as ia Brahminic society. Wi'en Bengal was a Buddhistic country, a similar distinction was observed among the several classes of the Buddhists. After the iiohammedau couquesi Brahminic ideal* were superimposed on the Buddhistic ideals of society. The distinctions

among the classes became more and more prominent, till they developed into a regular caste system. Porgettin<T their past history the people came to think with the Brahmins that all distinctions were due either to cross-breeding or to excommunication. Tho s.irvivals of forgotten Buddhism became the *anacharaniya* class.

It is a mistake to suppose that Hinduism is not a proselytising religion. Only its method is different from that of the three universal religions of tha world Hinduism proselytises by its system of castes. People who do not observe the rules of caste are mlcchchas. Mlechchas become Hindus or Brahminists by accepting the system of castes and the Brahmins as their spiritual guides and by venerating the cow and attributing purificatory efficacy to its urine and dung. Any number of outsiders may be brought within the fold of Hinduism so long as they are willing to form themselves into a new caste without interfering with the existing castes and to submit themselves to the spiritual authority of the Brahmins and invite them to all ceremonies and pay them. It was in this way that the casteless foreigners, like the Sakas, the Yuechi, and the Hnns, succumbed to the absorptive power of Brahminism and became Hinduised. Clans or families which succeeded in winning oh.ief tain ship were readily admitted into the framework of Hindu polity as Ivshatriyas or Rajputs, and there is no doubt that the Parlhara and many other famous Rajput clans of the north were developed out of barbarian hordes which poured into India during the filth and sixth centuries. The rank and file became Gujars and other castes, ranking lower than the Rajputs in tha scale of precedence. Further to the south, various indigenous, or ' aboriginal', tribes and clans underwent tho same process of Ilinduised social promotion, in virtue of which Gonds, Bhars, Khanwars, and so fortii emerged as Chandels, Rathors^ Gaharwars and other well-knowu Rajput clans, duly equipped with pedigrees reaching back to the 'sun and moon'. It is inevitable that an endogamous community, trying to secure spiritual sway over other communities, should group them into a hierarchy by means of castes. While child marriage is least prevalent among the hill tribes almost uninfluenced by Brahminism. it exists in undisputed sway or in a mixed form among the tribes whose social life derives its main characteristics from the caste system of the Hindus, iiy imitating the customs and practices of the Brahmins the lower classes ascend in the social ladder. Some have done so by introducing child marriage and others by prohibiting widow remarriage.

The marriage of giids before puberty and the prohibition oi tho remarriage ol widows are the direct result of the system of castes. The widow lias to romain a widow for the purpose of the annual sraddha, the ceremooy which assures repose to the jh\i ol her dead husband. According to the Hindu theory of marriage when a woman marries tha husband receives from her lather or guardian the proprietorship of the woman. Therefore conformably to the rites the second marriage of a woman could not be effected in the absence of the proprietor of the woman who alone had the i-ight to transfer bis property. Behind these religious reasons lie also certain utilitarian grounds. All the families which compose a caste have a common advantage in prohibiting the remarriage of widows; these experienced women may prove unfair competitors of young girls who already do not find it easy to get husbands. As has been already stated the fear cf impure alliances has made endogamy the rule. But when a caste becomes divided into a number of sub-castes, then a regular hypergamy becomes established For example the Rashi Brahmins of Bengal are divided hierarchically into Kulins, Siddha-Srotriyas, Sadhya-Srotriyas and Kashta-Srotriyas The Kuhncan marry in his own sub-caste and in the two higher sub-castes of Srotriyas; tho Siddba-Srotriya in his own sub-caste and in the sub-caste of Sadhya-Srotriyas, but the Sadhya-Srotriyas and Kashta-Srotriyas can exercise their choice only within their respective sub-castes. If the young Kulin Brahmins can marry equally in the inferior sub-castes or in their own sub-caste, evidently the young girls of this sub-caste will have fewer aspirants for their hands. As the possibilities ot choice for the male members of a sub-caste outside their own caste become greater, the chances of getting husbands within a sub-caste for its female members become smaller. Hypergamy must naturally lead to either the early marriage, or the perpetual maidenhood (as among Nambudris), of the girls of the higher castes. Thus the collective instinct has led to the interdiction of widow remarriage and to the early marriage of girls. But even when such customs might not be vitally necessary for a oaste, the desire to imitate the twice-born castes and thus rise in prestige extends ths area over which these pernicious customs prevail. While courtship and marriage between adults is the rule among tribes that have not been inlljenced by Brahminic civilization, child marriage is found a uong tribes whose social life derives its characrer mainly from the caste system of the Hindus. The attempt to find a support lor the Brahminic practica of early marr)a.re in Breuds theories of psycho-analysis is no better than the attempt to find an antiseptic basis for the Brahminio use of cow dung as a purificatory agent.

If any anacliaraniya. community changes its priests tor Brahmin priests, the community with its gods and goddesses are taken within the fold of Bnibminism. The doctrine of avataras enables the Brahmin to enrich his pantheon with new deities. The Buddha, who svas a sort of Anti-Christ for the Brahmins, has become one of the ten avataras of Vishnu. It is not unlikely that thri Buddha came to be looked upon as an avatara of Vishnu in Hindnised Buddhist circles. The oldest work with a fixed date in which the Buddha is rapresented as an avatara of Vishnu is Kshemendra's Dasavatara charita. In this book the ninth incarnation of Vishnu is spoken of as the son of Suddhodana and Mayadevi. Amara. simha, the Buddhist author of the Amarakosa, knows the Buddha as the son of Suddhodana and Mayadevi, but does **not** speak of him as an avatara of Vishnu. It was in the interval of time between these two authors that the fusion between Buddhism and Brahminism took place which led to the inclusion of the Buddha in the Brahminic pantheon. In places where Buddhism still prevailed, the Brahmin could not mask the figure of Buddha. So in the Ndpala Mahatmya, the guide of the Brahmin pilgrim in Nepal where Buddhism still exists in a degraded form, the Buddha is assigned an equal rank with Siva and Vishnu, and Parvati, the wife of Siva, teaches that "in this in comparable country to adore Buddha is to adore Siva ", and special rites are prescribed in honour of Buddha. Similarly in the Nilamata Parana, which is the canonical authority of the Brahminical cult in Kashmir, where Buddhism prevailed for a long time, the birth-day of the Buddha as an incarnation ot Vishnu is celebrated on the full-moon day of the month of Vaisakha, which is the anniversary of the birth ol the Buddha in all Buddhist countries. This Parana even asks the faithful to set Up and worship the image of the Buddha with the recitation of the verses employed by the Sakyas and also to worship tbe Utter and present them with food, garments and books. Ia

the calendars of modern Kashmir the Buddha's birth-day still retains a place. But in places where Buddhism had no intellectual leaders, the Brahmins have resorted to fraud and endeavoured to make out that Vishnu took the form of Buddha to deceive the enemies of the Brahmins. The asuras, the enemies of the Brahmins, had, it would appear, by the rigorous observance of Vedic rules and rites, beconje more powerful than the Brahmins themselves, a state of ai?airs that could not he tolerated, and therefore they induced Vishnu to assume the form of Buddha and preach to the r/aviavas the tutility of Vedic rules and rites. A careful study of the stories about the ten incarnations discloses that they were a dovije adopted by the Brahmins to secure for themselves the high position they have gained in the estimation of other Hindus. It would be a dangerous precedent to admit a Kshatriya to the rank d a Brahmin. Bmt there could be nothing unsafe or inconvenient in promoting a Kshatriya to the rank of a god, especially together with other Kshatriyas who taught the worship of Brahmins and cows. Though the Buddha image in the Mahabodhi temple at Buddha-Gaya, now in the possession of a Hindu viaJiaiit. is worshipped as the Buddhaavatar of Vishnu, yet the real attitude of Brahminism towards Buddhism is well seen at the same place, where the Hindu pilgrims to the adjacent 1^{rabminical} shrines are seen scowling and even spitting upon the Buddhist images now conserved there by the Government. Indeed the Gava pilgrimage which every pious Hindu must perform is one of direct hostility to Buddhism, the great. GayaAsnra, whoso suppression is the rnison d'etre of the pilgrimage, being none other than Buddha himself. This gives the lie to the view of some that Buddhism disappeared from India by amicable amalgamation with Brahminism. Not satisfied with all that has been done in antagonism to Buddhism, the Brahmin expects that the first expedition of the coming tenth avatar of Vishnu, namely, Kalki, will be against the Bouddbas ot Kikata, where, according to the BJiagavata Purnna, Vishnu incarnated as Bmddha, the son of Anjana, for the purpose of deluding the enemies of the gods on earth.

riverse have been the methods employed for the maintenance of the system of castes. Kumarila Bhatta championed sacerdotal Brahminism by resuscitating the doctrine of works [karma marga] by a commentary on the Purvamiriamsa. For the acceptance of sacerdotal rites they should

be based on indabitable authority. Human authority not being infallible, it was necessary for the purvamimamsaka to establish the infallibility and superhuman origin of the Veda. His work was supplemented by Sankaracharya, who endeavoured to attack Buddhism on its philosophic side. In doing this he accepted the teachings of Gaidapada karika. karika contains verses which appear to be only extracts from a work of the great Buddhist teacher, Nagarjuna, and employs against the reahstic Samkhyas and Vaiseshikas the very same arguments as were employed by the Buddhist vignana-L-adins and sunyavadim. It also taught that all things in the world were the product of illusion. Ail duality is said to be mental {dvaitam sarvam manas}. So long as the mind is at work, there is a knower, knowing, and the known. In sleep, on the other hand, there is no object for thought and consequently no duality. In deep dreamless sleep Brahmam "knows itself. "It is a knowledge where there is nothing to know and no knower". The individual soul is neither a part nor a production of Brahmam; it is Brahmam itself. How is this to be known? Certainly not by inferential reasoning, for Brahmam is not a self arising from any duality or from any reality of individual existence. Hence the existence of Brahmam must be accepted solely on the authority of scripture. But the knowledge of scriptur* presupposes a long course ol training, a previous discipline according to prescribed rites. Hence the gates of higher knowledge are closed both to women and Sudras, who have been born so in consequence of evil deeds in past hves. Hence the Sudra, even if he have the intellectual and moral capacity, has not the 'spiritual' capacity arising by birth, and accordingly true knowledge can never present itself to him. And " as long as true knowledge does not present itself, there is no reason why the ordinary course of secular and religious activity (as manifested in the castes; should not hold on undisturbed." Thus was established the reality of the world of ordinary belief (vyavahara), and the necessity of winning the world from Buddhism to Brahminism, from castelessness to oaste. Though it waa necessary to become one with Brahmam, it must be accomplished by the founding of Brahminical monasteries (milUs) on the lines of Buddhist viharas and the restoration and preservation of Brahminical institutions. Samkaracharya's primary object was to root out Buddhism from the country, and to attain that end he countenanced every form of

Hinduism, including the worship of Siva, Sakti, Vishnu, Sun and Ganesa.

It is interesting to note that the Madhvas represent Samkara as an incarnation of Manimat, who, according to the Mahabharata, was a leader of certain raksltasas killed by Bhima. The asiiras, we are told, despatched Manimat to incarnate as a Brahmana ascetic and destroy the Vedanta under cover of explaining it by establishing the identity of the individual soul with Brahmam. Manimat is born as a widow's bastard, named Samkara, and is brought up in great poverty. After going from teacher to teacher he invents his doctrine, described as snnyamargd and nirgunatva, and is hailed by the asuras as their saviour. On their advice be joins the Buddhists and teaches Buddhism under cover of A'edantism. Samkara's J/<7,vft doctrine is declared by thS Madhvas to be Buddhism in disguise (prachchanna bouddiia). Some scholars suggest that this Manimat theory of the Madhvas might have been due to the presence of Manichaens in the neighbourhood of the birth place of Madhvachari, the founder of the Madhva faith. Manichaens sometimes used language which implied that the soul was identical with the divine element. Mani represented the Buddha as the communicator of a divine revelation, and Manicbaeism has muchin common with Buddhism. Samkara is supposed to have received his education in Saurashtra, which was the region in which the Vignana-Vftdft and Suuyavada forms of Buddhism largely prevailed. "With this view of Madhvas may be compared what the Fadinapurana puts into the mouth of Siva: "It is I who, in this kaUi/iiga, taking the form of a Brahmin, have preached the doctrine of illusion (mayavada), a false doctrine, which is only disguised Buddhism, a doctrine condemned by men, and which disfigures the meaning of the words of ihe scripture. I have proclaimed this grand doctrine of illusion, as if it conformed to the Veda, though it is non-vedio, with a view to cause the destruction of beings. '

A fact of some significance in the life of Samkara is his adoption of the life of a sanyasin without passing through the grihastha (bonseholderj stage. This is a violation of the (iiraina dhai-)iia which we find generally coupled with rai-)ia:/hiirmn or the caste ideal. According to the asrmna rules one has to pass in succession through the stages of hrahmacharya, grihastha, and vanaprastha before entering upon sanyasa. His violation of the asrama rule was patent

to Samkara himself, as he apologises by saying that the asram-a rule was not observed in his day. But we doubt if the asravia rule was ever observed strictly by the Brahmins. Apasthamba, one of the law-givers, says that there is no reason to place one asravia before another and condemns the life of a hhihslm by quoting a saying of Prajapati that those who become hhikshus do not attain salvation, but become dust and perish. Again, another law giver, Boudhayana, (Quotes another old saying that an asura made the asravias striving against the gods and therefore a wise man would not take heed of them. These indicate that the Brahmins were **never** keen about the *asraina* ideal. This ideal was evidently introduced as a protest against the practice, obtaining among the Buddhists and the Jains, of youths becoming bhikshus without passing through the life of a grihnstha. The grihastha stage was uecessary, for the continuance of the born Brahmin and a male descendant was necessary for the worship of the spirits of the dead fpi(rts). The a.sr^nm ideal is therefore not the inheritance of the Brahmin from his ancient forbears, and has no right to be spoken a." sanathanadharma. But all things are equally old for mendacious gabblers.

When the Brahmin immigration to South India took place we are not in a position to decide Asoka sent missionaries to the country of the Cholas and Pandyas as well as the Satiyaputra and the Keralaputra. Buddhism flourished for a long time in South India. From the beginning of the first century to the beginning of the third Buddhism flourished vigorously in the Telugu country. The famous Buddhist tope at Aniaravati near the Krishna river was built under the rule of the Andhra-Rhrityas Tiruppappuliyur, now called old Cuddaiore, was the capital of a Pallava province and the seat of a Buddhist University. Kanchi was a strong-hold of Buddhism and very recently Buddha images were discovered in the pradakshana part of the Kamakshi temple there. It is said that in the eighth century a Jain teacher from Sravana Belligola, named .'Ikalanka, who had been partly educated in the Bouddha college at Ponataga "near Trivalur\ disputed with the Buddhists at Kanchi in the presence of the last Bouddha prince, Hemaaitala, and confuted them, that the prince became a Jain, and that the Bouddhas'were banished to Kandy. Vara Pandya of Madura, on becoming a Jain, is said to have persecuted the Buddhists, subjecting them to personal tortures, and banishing them from the country. A relative of Udaya Varma, the head of the Chola Royal family and king of Northern Kerala, became a Buddhist and built several temples and lived apart from the royal family. Bhatta Kumarila who lived at the end of the seventh century regarded the South Indian dialects as mlcckcha or un-Brahminic, as they were the languages employed by the Buddhists. It would therefore be not too much to assume that about 700 A D. Brahminical civilization had but little penetrated into South India. The Brahmins might have begun to find the south a promising field of labour, but there were very few settlers. Yuan Chwang who visited Kanchi speaks of the inhabitants as chiefly consisting of Jains and some Buddhists, but has not a word ai)out Brahmins. The title oi ayijar or "father given to the Brahmin in South India indicates his position as a missionary and founder of a new order among a people uninfluenced by Brahminism. He is therefore a newcomer, and hence no ilrahmin in India is more bigoted and exclusive, and less wiliiui; to permit the inferior castes to rise in the social scale, llnlike the Brahmin of the north there is no lower caste from whose hand he will take water. The reason assigned is that Hinduism in the north has been defiled by successive foreign conquests, while, isolated in the south, it has remained untouched by foreign influence.

The Hindus at the present time may be divided into two large groups, the Brahmins and the non-Brahmins. The castes which describe themselves as Brahmins, however exclusive they may be among themselves, follow for the most part the religion taught by the Smritis. while the castes, not calling themselves Brahmins, generally follow the religion of the Puranas. The Puranas are all post Buddhistic, as they all speak of the Buddhavatar and one of them specially speaks of Snddhodana's son who beguiled the daityas to become Buddhists. In most of these works there are large sections on the rights and duties of the different castes, on the different asramas, and on general Brahminic rites such as sraddhci.t. Nearly all the Puranas are sectarian in character, that is to say, they are devoted to the cult of one of the deities, Vishnu and Siva, and describe the ceremonies and feasts (vratas) and the places of pilgrimage (tirtha-'i) relating to the one or the other. The theory of Yugas finds a full exposition in them and is connected with the oaste system. The word Ynga occurs in the Vedas and the names of the four Yugas, Krita, Trcta, Dvapara and Kali, occur in the Brahmanams.

Bat these words originally belonged to the language of the gamblers of the Vedic times. 27-ete meant three; dvapara meant two; krita and kali, meaning respectively 'eaccomplished "and " strife ", represented four and one respectively. So they represented the figures cut or engraved on the dice. But the word Yuga in the sense of a cycle or age is post-Vedio. It is in the Puranas and the laws of Manu that we find the theory of the four Yugas coupled with the theory of the three Gunas in full bloom. In the same books occur the texts on which has been based all that is objectionable in caste. One of the Puranas definitely assigns the origin of caste to the TretaYuga: "The perfect beings of the first age. some tranquil, some fiery, some active and some distressed, were again born in the Treta, as Brahmins, Ac. governed by the good and bad actions performed in former births ". A bull was introduced in the Puranas as a symbol of the Vedic religion. In the Krita Yuga, the glorious age of all excellence, this bull stood on four legs; in the Treta, the age of knowledge, one Ol his legs was broken; in the Dvapara, the age of sacrifice, two legs were broken. In the present ago, the KaU Yuga, the age of darkness, three of his legs are hroken and the bull is limping on the remaining leg. The fact that the Buddha is described as having made his appearance in the interval (sandhya) bet'.veen the Dvapara and Kali Yugas indicates how the buU happened to lose its legs. So the theory of the one-footed Kali is merely the attempt of the Brahmin to explain away the disrepute into which the Vedic ritual had fallen. As already mentioned the revivalists of Hinduism had to fight not with a ritualistic religion but with a form of Buddhism in which bliakti or devotion to the teacher ignru) played a dominant part The Vedic ritual deliberately kept the Sudra at a distance. So in the Puranas, intended largely for the use and edification of the non-dvijah, is emphasiged the doctrine of/(."iij/cii in the form of devotion to one or the other of the gods, Vishnu and Siva. The readiness displayed in the Puranas to provide relief from sin and enable every one to obtain substantial blessings in a future life shows that Brahminism found it expedient to smooth the path of religion for the masses outbidding other claimants for popular favours. Whether deliberately provided or not, the easy ways of gaining final emancipation provided by the Puranas must have presented better attractions than the self-discipline demanded by Buddhism from its adherents. It is not improbable that the popular teachings contained in the Puranas served to absorb the Buddhists into Hinduism, The essential difference between Brahminism and Buddhism is the worship of gods and the worship of gurus. All Hindus at tho present day worship both devas and gurus, and the guru is looked upon as the living embodiment on earth of the god worshipped. This worship of guru by the various Hindu sects is nothing but the result of the influence of Buddhism on Brahminism.

Religion, even the most rudimentary, if it has not lost its vitality, represents the totality of knowledge to which the intelligence of a people has led them. It contains necessarily some explanation of nature, of the phenomena of which man, though he is the spectator and perhaps the victim, is conscious of not being the author. This is the part played by deliberative reason in the genesis of religions. If man aspires to know the forces of nature, the causes of the effects he perceives, it is because he desires to have some hold on them, of making use of them, of defending himself against them, in short, of finding some means of getting into practical relation with them. To conceive these forces as properties inherent in matter, as mechanical actions which occur regularly according to invariable laws, a long experience and an effort at abstraction, of which the primitive man is incapable, are necessary. He therefore makes the world in his image, that is to say. just as his acts are to him the result of his will {atman}, so natural phenomena are the result of the intervention of wills incorporated in matter, but distinct an* separable from the visible or tangible realities. All religions have to pass through this phase of their development, which is called animism, and, in reality, even those that have passed this stage are spoken of as religions, only when they possess 80036 tincture of animism. Progress in religion consists in reducing the number, or banishing the presence, of theso wills; in separating them from matter and creating for them an independent personality, while giving them at the same time power to act on nature, of which they form an integral part; and in grouping them in a hierarchy and placing at the top a supreme will. This is certail ly the last stage in the animistic religions. What is called monotheism, or simply theism, is in reality only a system • in which the multiple capricious wills of primitive demonology are subordinated to the will of an all-powerful being. When these subordinate agents who execute the orders of the omnipotent being and put him in relation with the world, are renounced, this being becomes relegated to an ineffable and inaccessible singleness. Then the transcendent being either becomes a metaphysical entity, conceived as an immutable will, showing itself in an implacable predestination, which, suppressing all freedom, renders prayer meaningless; or becomes immanent or infused in nature as its soul, being multiple in manifestation but at the same time one in reality. In this pantheism all diversity is reduced to appearance, and human personality affirmed by consciousness, is nothing more than a mirage floating on the ocean of the infinite all.

On the soil of India the development of religion has not been different. Examples of the different phases of development can be found among the various religions which are included under the term "Hinduism". Prom the demonology of the lower classes of Hindus to the metaphysical rehgious philosophy of Samkara it may be a far-off step. But allot them have one characteristic in common, perhaps the only char.icteristic, namely, the caste sentiment which underlies the social edifice. This sentiment forms the spinal cord ot every religion described as Hindu. Even when the doctrines and ritual of any sect are incapable of providing it with vitality, it is the caste spirit that gives it stien-jth and support. The bulwark of caste which the Brahmin threw round himself for the maintenance of his supremacy has resulted in a spirit of narrow exclusiveness which has infected every religion born on the Indian Soil, as the following survey will

The most marked feature of the religion of the Eig Veda, is henotheism. which naturally developed at a later stage into a monotheism. The development of one deity gradually into all deities and finally into the head of ail is easy. Most probably this development took place in relation to the worship of the sun. In one verse of the Eig Veda the sun is called "the lite (atman) of all that moveth and moveth not," and in another verse it is said of the sun: "They call him Indra, Varuna, -Agni, and he is the strong-winged Garutman To what h oae (ekavisaniam) wise men give many names; they call it Agni, Yama, Matarisvan." It is said that Yagnavalkya refused to obey his preceptor's command to join in worship with people whom he styled 'miserable and inefBcient Brahmins'. He explained that he acted for hhaktin

"then departed and worshipped the sun. Even at the present day the sun is worshipped by Hindus as surya bhagavan, and some do not touch food unless they see the sun. AU the legends connected with the Bbagavata religion are connected in some way or other with the sun. In later times the sun became identified with Rudra-Siva or Vishnu. Perhaps this coalition was due to the winning over of the Bhagavatas by the Vedic priests as their allies to stem off the propagandist work of the Buddhists. This monotheistic development gave rise to a new path of salvation, called hhakti marga, as distinguished from guana marga and kaniia marga. In the kar.na marga the means to salvation consist of the observance of orthodox rites and ceremonies, while in gnana marga, knowledge or philosophy forms the means. Bhahti first developed in Buddhist circles. The venerable Sariputra says: Lord! Such faith have I in the Exalted One, that methinks there never has been, nor will there be, nor is there now any other, whether srainana on brahmana, who is greater and wiser than the Exalted One." The Mabayana brought this hhakti or devotional side of Buddhism to the forefront. It laid stress upon winning peace (santi) by punya, thd passionate devotion of self to works of charity and love, rather than by gnana, the attainment of spiritual knowledge.

The example of right living and right thinking set by generations of the Buddha's devout disciples had been ths source of inspiration to many religious teachers. The Buddha has two distinct characters In his first and early character he is the typical yogi, the great teacher of the power to be gained by self-suppression and conquest of the passions. In his second he is the great friend of the common people, advocating universal brotherhood, universal equality, and universal compassion for all forms of animal life. In Rudra-Siva the Hindu revivalists found a suitable counterpart to the first side. The cult of Rudra-Siva is no other than the cult of Agni in its frightful aspect. The solemn and awful ceremony of the Satarudriya shows that Rudra became the representative of the fearful aspect of life and nature. No wonder that some saii'a sects are horrible aud demoniacal and they have developed Rudra into the horrid god Bhairava with his wife Chaudika wearing a garland of human skulls and requiring human sacrifices and offerings of wine for his propitiation. Kashmir gave birth to a more humane and metaphysical system of Saivism. The saioa propagandists of South India were saints and poets rather than philosophers whose names are remembered only by their devotional lyrics. Though the Brahmins were the chief leaders and exponents of this movement, yet the majority of teachers were non-Brahmins, a feature due to the earlier introduction of Buddhism and Jainism in the southern country. The Saivites had to contend very largely with the Jainas and the influence of Jainism on Saivism seems to be evident in some of the stories of the Saiva Puranas and in the number sixty three of the devotees of Siva, which is also the number of the Salaka-purushas of the Jains.

An important Saivite sect in South India is tho Lingayat or Virasaiva sect.. The Lingayats went further than any sect of the Hindus in their reform. They set up for themiSeives a special system of social relations and domestic rites. They denied the supremacy of the Brahmin and received sacraments irom their own priests. They discarded the cremation of the dead, the observance of caste and the laws relating to defilement, which are accepted by the other Hindus, such as those occasioned by a woman's periodical ailments and by the death of relations. They did not believe in metempsychosis, and consequently had no titilis. or aimiversary festivals, to commemorate the dead and to afl'ord them the benefit of the prayers, sacrifices and intercession of the living. They allowed their widows to remarry. In short, they regarded themselves as a community distinct from all those tliat owed their origin to the Brahminic system. According to Dr. Fleet the present Lingayat sect is a development of the guild of the five hundred swamis of Aihple. a village in the Bijannr District, the protectors of the Vira Bananju religion, who, though always Saivas, patronised also Buddhism, The members of the Virasaiva sect carry on their bodies the image of Siva in the form of lingam. Though this liogam is generally supposed to represent Siva's organ of generation, yet it is not unlikely that we have in this emblem of Siva a replica of tho Buddhist da,i:oha with a Hindu interpretation behind it.

The fusion between Buddhism and Saivism is so complete that most of the ceremonies, practices and divinities of Saivism have their counterparts in Tantrik Buddhism. Buddha is said to be the brother-in-law of Siva. In ISiepal on the «th day of the month of Kartik Pasupati is decorated with a head-dress like that of the image of Buddha and worshipped. The Siddhars of Tamil literature are in no way different from

the Siddhas of Mahayana literature. Like the Buddhists they are also not favourably disposed towards caste. In both Saivism and Buddhism the tantrik rites are connected with the doctrine of Sakti. In the ritual proper of the Saktas there are no caste differences and men of all castes become Brahmanas dnringthe worship of the Bhairavichakra, though they resume their own castes when the worship is over. All castes are equally capable of attaining the goal (Sihihi). Both systems have a strong predilection for Yoga, by which the mahamkha. the joy of which Sakti is the organ, is to be obtained. The Sakta religion in all its forms freely resorts to intoxicants. For the drunken conscious ess is regarded as a bit of the mystic consciousness, and the eestacy o! the latter is not essentially different from the former. "The sway of alcohol over mankind," says **Prof.** James. " is unquestionably due to its power to stimulate the mystical faculties, usually crushed to earth by the cold facts and dry criticisms ot the sober hour...Not through mere perversity do men run after it. To the poor and the unlettered it stands in the place of symphony concerts and of literature; and it is part of the deeper mystery and tragedy of life that whiffs and gleams of something that we immediately recognise as excellent should be vouchsafed to, say. many of us in the fleeting earlier phases of what in its totality is ao degrading a poisoning." the pity of it is that the effects of intoxicants are habit-forming and the habit-forming nature of alcohol usually wins in the end, notwithstanding the great precautions taken to meet its poisonouss action.

Just as the hhakti marga found expression in various Saivite sects, so did it also show itself in Vaishnavite cults. The doctrine of the Vaishnava school is a qualified non duality (visishtathaita) like that of the Kashmir school of Saivism, Vishnu taking the place of Siva and Lakshmi that of Sakti. Vishnu is the Buddha in his character of a beneficent protector, and the Buddha is an incarnation of Vishnu. The majestic head of Vishnu which forms the centre of the figure of Trimurti is the Brahminical counterpart of the head of the Bodhisattva. Sir VV. W. Hunter says in his Indian Empire: "If we examine the religious life of the Vaishnavite community, we find that their rules are Buddhistic with Brahminical reasons attached'. It may not be easy to establish the truth of Hunter's statement. Yet there are features which bring Vaishnavism into dose relationship with Buddhism.

Of all places sacred to the Vaisbnavites the greatest is Puri. The PiinishoUama 2Iohatmya speaks of chaturmurti—Jagannatha, Balaratna, Subhadra and Sndarsanachakra. The word Jagannatha is used more by the Buddhists as an epithet of the Buddha than by the Hindus as an epithet of Vishnu. The symbol of the Buddhist triad, Buddha, Dharma, Samgha, with a slight alteration, forms the figure which represents Jagannatha, Balabadhra and Subadhra in the Puri temple. In ancient scuiptures and drawings Jagannatha is given as the ninth incarnation of Vishnu, Outside the gate of the holy city is to be found an emaciated figure of EkaJasi, the personification of the fast on the 11th day of the moon so sacrei to Vaishnavas all over India, but she cannot enter Puri, as there the fast is prohibited. One of the essential features of Vaishnavism is thus neglected at Puri. The explanation is that Puri was a centre of Buddhism, and the Buddhists were opposed to fasting. The tradition is that the temple of Jagannath was built by Indra Dyumna, a Buddhist king who did not believe in castes. While other religions preach: "Bast and pray, . Buddhism preaches: "Peed and meditate.' No where is adoration paid to the discus of Vishnu. The importance attached to it at Puri and the fa«t of the Purmhottavia Mahatmya making it distinct and of equal rank with the other three images clearly shows that it had a Buddhistic origin. In Puri the throne on which the images are placed is called the ratnovcdi. reminding one of the three ratnas of the Buddhists. Within the precincts ot the temple of Jagannath at the present day no distinction is made between high and low castes, and the food prepared for the deity or .dedicated to the images is received and eaten by all, and is supposed incapable of being polluted by the touch of the very.lowest caste. In the Gaya Mahatmya there is a verse which enjoins that before offering the funeral cake on the Vishnu-pad the pilgrim should go to ISuddha Gaya and salute the Bodhi tree there, which has to be saluted as the Bodhisattva in a special mantra.

The earliest of the Vaishnavite sects was that founded by Eamanuja. He was dissatisfied with his *advaita* teacher and separated from him. He came under the influence of Yamunaoharya, the descendant of Nathamuni who had composed in Tamil songs of love and devotion to Vishnu. The *Prahandhas* or Bongs in praise of Vishnu are really the works of Brahmins, although they are ascribed to devotees of differ-

ent castes, called Alvars. Ramanuja wrote nothing in Tamil. He wrote all his worlds in Samskrit. He gave an exclusive form to the path of salvation hy hhakti. According to him the three upper orders, who alone were qualified to study the Vedas and to acquaint themselves with the Pnrva.mimamsa. and the Uttanrmimainsa. could practise hhoMi, but not the Sudras. However, the Sudras could practise pra-•pntti hy taking refuge (.sarrtKa//;.) in a Brahmin devotee of Vishnu as preceptor (^'•/Nvt). Though a Samskrit Vaishnava verse says that a worshipper of Bhagavat is no Sudra, still the Sudra is not qualified to practise hhokli, because not being a ilvijah he is utterly helpless. The followers of Ramanuja are divided into two schools, the Northern and the Southern. The former iiadakalai) teaches that a person belonging to an inferior caste should be treated on terms of equality only so far as conversation by words is concerned, while the latter school is more liberal and has shaped Ramanuja's teachings so as to include Sudras also. In the later years of bis life Ramanuja was persecuted by the Saivite Chola prince of his time, and tied away from Srirangam to Mysore, where he converted one of the Jain princes to the Vaishnavite faith. The relations between the Jains and the Vaishnavitea in Mysore do not seem to have been cordial. Even in Northern India when the Vaishnavites became more numerous than the Jains they persecuted the latter.

In the minds ct many people there is a confusion between Jainism and Buddhism. But these two religions are poles asunder. Buddhism teaches that all asceticism is useless tor attaining salvation, while Jainism teaches the absolute necessity of asceticism. Jainism - represents a systematic development of the ascetic side of Brahminism. The Jains seem to take a sort of pride in outdoing their. Brahminic rivals as regards rigorous conduct, mistaking nastiness and filthiness tor the highest pitch of ascetic virtue, whereas the Buddhists endeavour to bring their conduct in accordance with the dictates of humanity. The doctrine of ahimsa degenerated in Jainism into an objection to the, destruction ot even the most infinitesimal insect life, and has led to ridiculous precautions against harm to such life or even to the air itself. The doctrine against the taking of another's property is carried to a prohibition of attachment to any objector person, even to the wearing ot clothes. Jainism encourages religious suicide. Buddhism combats the Brahminic theory of the

Atman as being the absolute and permanent soul according to the pantheistic as well as the monadic point of view. But Jainism fully concurs in the Brahminio theory of the Atman. The Jains attribute souls not only to animals but also to the smallest particles of the elements. So such dogma is accepted by the Buddhists. The Jains are great sticklers for caste and have not been able to carry their religion beyond the limits of caste-ridden India. Tha Buddhists are to live, both in public and private, in the practice of those virtues which, when, unbroken, intact, unspotted and irablemished, make men free and which are untarnished by the belief in the elBcacy of any outward acts of ritual or ceremony, or by the hope of any kind of future life.

A tangible way in which a rehgion shows its influence on civilization is art. Brom their contributions to art we can determine the innernatures of different religions. Buddhism. Brahminism and Jainism have each contributed in almost equal degree to the art of the cave temples of EUora. Here we can follow with un-erring steps the underlying character of each religion. " fn the earliest caves ", says Sir John Marshall, the Director of the Arch:eological survey of India, you see Buddhist art almost at its zenith; you mark its graceful lines; its rich b; t restrained decoration, its transparent sincerity, and above all its peace and tranquillity. You pass on to other caves. You see this same art slowly bit surely declining under the deadening pall of convention; its creative force is stifled; it is becoming stiff, sterile and atrophied. You go further along the face of the cliff and enter another hall; at ouca you miss the intellectual and spiritual feeling of the earlier sculptures: around you are life-like figures starting from the rock—some solemn and majestic, others hideous and revolting, but all of them emodramatic and awe-inspiring. You have passed from tional the realm of Buddhism into that of Hindinsm, and you realise —with a start as it were —the vast gulf that separates the two. You can see forms obvio.;sly copied from the Buddhist; but their peacetulness is gone. Ethos (it I may use a Greek expression) has given way to pa<7iOS. They have become the incarnation of all the dead forces of nature, of passion and of lust, of suffering and death. And so you go from one to iinother of these halls, surrounded by sombre and relentless forms, peering from their dark recesses: you surrender yourself involuntarily to the prevailing gloom; but you do not,

you cannot, forget the lofty spiritual beauty of the earlier caves; and you wonder within yourself what came over the spirit or the character of the people when they forsook Buddhism for the dread cult of Siva. And so you make your way, almost with a sigh of relief, to the temples of the Jains-all of them very perfect, all very elaborate, all very sumptuous, but one and all destitute of creative genius. You admire them for their rich decoration, but you can not help being struck with their narrow, nerveless design; and you gaze unmoved at their composed and icy images. It has always been so with the Jains." Taranatha declares that wherever Buddhism prevailed skilful religious artists were found, but where the iiiihy& doctrines prevailed, unskilful artists came to the front. Similarly says Sir John Marshall that wherever the religion of the Buddha penetrated there the art of the Buddhists followed in its wake, and carried with it a message of lofty idealism and of spiritual grandeur unrivalled in the art of any nation. Brahminism had no art of its own in India and the plastic arts of Saivism and Vishnuism are the bastard children of the sculpture ot the Buddhists. As Dr. Gunwedel says, "the figurative part of Brahman art, so far as we are now acquainted with it, is based essentially upon Buddhist elements-so much so indeed that the Saiva figures which originated at the same time as the Northern Buddhist, appear to have fixed types, whilst the iconography of the Vishnu cult embraces chiefly Buddhist elements to which different interpretation has been given. But still more dependent on Buddhism are the representations Jaina art.'

It is stated that a spirit of sympathy for the lower castes and classes of Hindu society has been a distinguishing feature of Vaishnavism. This certainly is not true of Ramanuja's religion. Although teaching the theoretical equality of all castes, if they are Vaishnavites, the teachers and leaders of the religion of Ramanuja have been invariably Brahmins. Ramanuja laid down the strictest injunctions as regards eating and drinking. The liberalising influence of Vaishnavism in South India was due not to Ramanuja but to some of his later disciples. It is interesting to note that in South India there is a class among the followers of Ramanuja known as satanis. The word satani is connected w4th the Samskrit word satana which means dipt hair. These Satanis have shaven heads and play a leading part in temple services and

in the funeral ceremonies of non-brabmin Vaisbnavites. It looks as if these people had originally no caste among them. Some try to trace them to Sanatana. a follower of Chaitanya, who travelled in the south. But their practices seem to indicate that they were originally Buddhists who, though accepting the teachings of RamanUja, still stick on to their Buddhistic practices. Again, there is a class of Vaishnava mendicants called dasaris who seem to be invested with soma sort of authority. No marriage or funeral ceremony among the nonBrahmin Vaishnavas takes place without their presence and the payment of fees to them. They form an essential accompaniment in the pilgrimages of non-Brahmins to Tirupathi. Is this also a vestige of the connection of non-Brahmin Vaishnavas with Buddhism? Among Brahmins it is only the Tenkalai Vaishnava widows that do not shave their heads. It is believed that this custom belongs to tha low castes, the Jains and the Buddhists who supplied tha original Vaishnavite converts. For an analogue to prapattL some turn to Christianity, but it can bo seen in the Buddhist theory of parivarta or diverted merit Ramanuja's system is known as Sri sampradaya, as Sri or Bakshmi, tha wife of Mshnu, plays a dominant part ia procuring salvation for man. It is interesting to note that the figure of Sri in South Indian sculptures resembles the figure of the nativity of tha Buddha in the sculptures at Sanchi.

Though Eamanuja discarded Samkara's advaita, he still preached a doctrine of qualified non-duality, oMei vis is htaalvaita. According to this teaching the Brahman of tha Bpanisbads is a personal God, in whom everything that is e. ists and who is endowed with every imaginable auspicious quality. Soul (chit) and matter (ac/iii) alike proceed from God (Vishnu) and God pervades all things as their inward support (aniaryawiw). The doctrine of nou-duality in every form was rejected by Madvaohari, who taught the doctrine of duality. He afSrmed the existence of two separate eternal principles, instead of three, as taught by Eamanuja; these two principles are supposed to be related as independent and dependent, as master and servant, as king and subject. Tha independent principle is identified with Vishnu and tha dependent principle with the human soul. The clerical memlers of Madva's sect are Brahmins, hat the lay votaries are members of every class of society but the lowest. The followers of this sect are great stcklers for oaste.

It is in the teaching and life of Eamananda that we for the first time meet with the strict observance of the equality of all castes. Eamananda was a disciple of Eaghavananda, the head of the monastery founded by Eamanuja at Seringapatam. Eamananda had an altercation with his teacher on a question of discipline, and, going to Northern India, established there a sect of his own. Its principal doctrinal peculiaritj' consists in insisting on Vishnu in his form of Rama as the chief object of devotion. It may be pointed out that the whole story of the Ramayana is an adaptation of a Vedic legend. Sita can be traced to the Eig Veda where she appears as the furrow personified and invoked as a goddess. In some of the Grihya sutras she again appears as a genius of the ploutjhed field, is praised as a being of great beauty, and is considered the wife of Indra or Parjanya, the rain god. There are traces of this origin in the Eamayana itself. For Sita is represented as having emerged from the earth when her father was once ploughing, and at last she disappears underground in the arms of the earth-goddess. Her husband, Rama, is no other than Indra. and his conflict with Eavana, the chief of the demons, represents the Indra-Vritra myth of the Rig Veda. This identification is confirmed by the name of Eavanas son. Indrajit, or Indrasatru, the latter being originally an epithet of Vritra in the Eig Veda. Havana's most notable feat, the rape of Sita, has its prototype in the stealing of the cows recovered by Indra. Hanuraat. the chief of tho monkeys and Kama's ally in the recovery of Sita, is the son of the wind god, with the patronymic Maruti, and is described as flying hundreds ofleagi.es through the air to find Sita. Hence in his figure perhaps survives a remirescence of Indra's alliance with the Maruts in his conflict with Vritra and of the dog Sarama who as Indra's messenger crosses the waters of the Rasa and tracks the cows. Sarama recurs as the name of a demoness who consoles Sita in her captivity. The teachings of tho Eamayana. like that of the Mahabharat. virtually consist in asking the Kshatriya rulers of the country to follow their great ancestor Eama and not to attach any importance to the revolutionary teaching of the son of the petty Kshatriya chieftain of the Himalayan Terai. By preferring the Eama avatar to that of Krishna, Eamananda introduced a purer and more chaste worship.

Unlike previous Vaishnavite teachers Bamanand wrote

in tha vernacular instead of Samskrit, and thus brought hia teachings within the reach of all classes. He also interpreted the bhakti doctrine of the brotherhood of man in its most liberal sense and admitted all castas, even the lowest, not only as lay members of his sect, but also as teachers. Ha released his followers from the shackles Of oaste, laying down no special ordinances as regards eating or bathing. Among his twelve chief disciples there were a barber and a low caste leather worker, each of whom founied a sub-sect. The liberalizing influence of Bamaaand's teaching was the source of the religious revival in Alaharashtra which covered a period of nearly five huadrad years. This period gave birth to various saints and prophets from among all castes, even outoastes, who manfully straggled against the exclusive Spirit of casta domination. Namdev was a tailor by birth as well as occupatioa. Bkanath, though a Brahmin, decried Caste and suffered much in coasequenae. Chokamala was a ilahar. Tukaram, a contemporary of Sivaji, was a petty shopkeeper. All these asserted the spiritual dignity of man as baing independent of the accident ot birth and Social rank. The result of this movement was the removal of oaste exclusiveness from the religious sphere and its relegation to the social concerns of life. Some believe that the idol worshipped under the name of Vittala at Pandharpur, with which the popular Vaishnavism ot the Mahratta country is connected, was originally an image of the Buddha. The image has a curious sort of crown, which reminds one of the ushnisha ot he Buddha images. A uovil institution ottha ohakti moveme.^t of the Mahratta country is the/iarf&.ii/ia, a popular exposition of religion in the form of story interspersed with song.

The Mohammedan conquest of India interrupted tha course of evolution of religion in India. Mohammedanism or Islam believes in one god, who is supposed to have revealed bis will to mankind through an Arab named Mohammed who died about 63i \(D \) These revelations are contained in tha Koran. The earliest method of propagation of the faith was persuasion, especially when the hearers showed signs of teceptiveness. But from the eighth year of the flight of Xlohammed to Medina, when a manifesto, demanding the submission of all mankind to the faith, was issued, Islam was propagated by the sword, and where the conquered were aot forced to become converts they were reduced to a tribu-

tary caste. The humiliations 'and vexations to vrhioh the non-Moslem was put rendered life so intolerable as to compel conversion to Islam. The equality of all Moslems is a fundamental doctrine of Islam. If there was anywhere a caste system, it was due to the conquering power arrogating to itself all the ofiBces of the state. As regards non-Moslems Mohammed's principle was to tolerate Jews and Christians but to exterminate others, who were called pagans. On the subject peoples of other cults Islam inflicted the disability to bear arms, as the orthodox teaching forbids the Moslems to have non-Moslem allies in their wars. Autocratic government is tbe chaiacteristic of all Islamic states, a natural consequence of Mohammed's position as divine commissioner over his community. Islamic jurisprudence regards legislation as absolutely beyond man's capacity,- his business being to administer according to rules revealed by God Tbe punishment for apostasy is death Four obligations are incumbent on every Moslem: the repetition five times daily of certain formulae in Arabic accompanied by certain postures of the body; fasting during the whole month called Ramadan from sunrise to sunset; pilgrimage at least once in a life-time to Mecca followed by one to Medina; the apportionment of two and a half per cent of one's possessions, when one has means, for the support of the poorer members of the community. Of forbidden foods the most important is pork, and the drinking of wine also is prohibited, although this rule has been violated from the earliest times. Islam permits polygamy and furnishes great facilities for divorce. The immediate consequence of these privileges of the male sex was the seclusion of women and the use of the veil. One of the duties incumbent on the Moslem community is the Jihad, the fighting of mankind in general to render Islam dominant. The Moslem should not remain on land which is not under Islamic domination, but quit it if be can not subdue it.

The earliest Moslem invaders of India waged ruthless war against Buddhism and Brahminism. The Mohammedans made no distinction between Brahminists and Buddhists and called them both by the same name Hindu or Indian. In the early period of their conquest they could not brook the neighbourhood of Hindus and therefore ruthlessly massacred all Hindus and destroyed their temples, although after permanent colonization they suffered idolaters to live in their neighbourhood. Alberuni

says that Mohammed of Ghazni utterly ruiaed the prosperity of the country. In A., D. 1024 Mohammed penetrated Kattiwar and destroyed the famous temple of Somnath. Kuthuddin captured Benares, destroyed nearly a thousand temples, and raised mosques on their foundations. Alauddin Sacked the temple city of Bhilsa, and sent the idols to one of the gates of Delhi to be trodden under the feet of true believers. Even Feruz, more merciful than his predecessors, forbade the erection of new temples, repressed all unbelievers, and imposed poll-tax [jizya) on all Hindus. Feruz was severe not only with the Hindus but also with Mussulman sectaries. Like Mohammed ot Ghazni he was a zealous iconoclast, and as a good Sunni he burnt the books of the Shiahs and suppressed their propaganda. Feruz took great interest in the welfare of his proselytes, no matter how the conversion was effected. The invasion of Timur in 139S A. D. was accompanied by massacre and rapine at Hardwar and other places. Sikander, the second of the Lodi dynasty, was a just ruler and patron of learning, but too zealous a Mussulman not to support the bigoted Sunnis in their quarrels with the Hindus. He not only destroyed Hindu temples, but built mosques opposite to bathing ghats and prohibited the Hindus from bathing there. Islam being an individualistic cult, is a protest against the restraints laid down by Brahminism on individual liberty. The social practices of the Hindus were therefore felt as an offence by Mussulman rulers, however much they might try to be just in their rule.

Ths contact cf the stern monotheism of Islam with reformed Vaishnavism brought about some purely deistic developments which are observed in the teachings of Kabir and Nanak. In the religious history of India Kabir occupies an important place. He was a Mohammedan, but became a disciple of Ramanand and thus belonged to the Vaishnava school of thought. He attempted a fusion of Hinduism with Islam and the result was that some of his followers describe themselves as Hindus and some as Mohammedans. Kabir rejected entirely all the outward signs of Hinduism. Ha acknowledged no caste distinctions, saw no virtue in asceticism and fasting, and ruthlessly condemned the Hindu theogony. Transmigration was a feature in his doctrine borrowed from Hinduism. Though he employed the name of Eama, it meant for him only the supreme being and not jhe incarnation of Vishnu.

Nanak was a contemporary of Kabir and worked in tlie Panjab. His creed in ics strict form enjoins the belief in a single god, condemns the worship of other deities, idolatry, pilgrimages to the great shrines of Hinduism, faith in omens, charms, and witchcraft; and does not recognise_ceremonial impurity at birth or death. As a social system it abolished caste distinctions, and, as a necessary consequence, Brahminical supremacy and ordinances, in all family rites. The followers of Nanak are called Sikhs (from Samskrit siksha). The scripture of the Sikhs is called the Adigrandh and contains many sayings ascribed to Kabir.

The teachings of Kabir and Nanak influenced many earnest souls to protest against the grosser abuses in Hinduism. Dadu was one such person, who spent his life in preaching the new doctrines over the Midlands. He again and again said: "lam not a Hindu, nor a Mussulman. I belong to none of the six schools of philosophy. I love the merciful God." He rejected the Vedas and the Quran as ultimate truth, the Vedantic philosophy, ritualism and formalism, caste and caste marks, idolatry, the use of the rosary, pilgrimages and ceremonial ablutions. He held that the world was not evil in itself, but that the bad man made it evil by allowing it to lead his mind away from God. He gave a new interpretation to the doctrine of transmigration o; souls by saying that all possible rebirths happen in man's one life on earth. "The moods of mind and the quality of actions give the soul the birth of a fox, a goose, a pig, an ass and such like.'

In the fifteenth century under the patronage of the Sharki sultans Jaunpur, which was founded by Feruz Shah, became a great seat of Mohammedan learning. One of the sultans, Husain Shah, endeavoured to reconcile the religions differences of the Hindu and the Mussidman communities By his orders the *Bhagavata Putiina* was first translated from Samskrit into Bengali. It may be pointed out that the Mohammedan conquest was instrumental in elevating the Bengali language to the status of a court language. As the Buddhists wrote in the vernaculars of the people, the vernaculars were looked down upon by the orthodox Brahmins. The historian of Bengali literature declares that "if the Hindu kings had continued to enjoy independence, Bwagali would scarcely have get an opportunity to fiud its way to the court of kings ". Hussain Shah originated a religious cult to

unite Musaulmans and Hindus in the worship of one god under the hybrid name otSatyci-Pir, a wordcomposed of the Samskrit word satya and the Arabic word pir. The Jaunpur school instilled a spirit which made it possible for pious Mussulmans to become the followers of Chaitanya and also prepared the way for the Din-Ilahi of Emperor Akbar.

For a long time the Brahmins did not reconcile themselves to the Mohammedan conquest. In the fourteenth century, however, began a reconciliation of the Brahmins with the ruling Mussulm&n powers. The Bahmini kingdom was established at Gulberga in the Dekhan by Hasan Gangu Bahmini, a servant of Gangu, a Brahmin astrologer of Delhi. He took the name of Bahmini in gratitude to his Brahmin patron and made the latter his finance minister. According to Perishta this was the first time a Brahmin accepted office in the sec/i^e of a Mussulman ruler. Before that time the Brahmins were sometimes in favour with the ruling Mussulman sovereigns as astrologers, philosophers, physicians, but they held aloof from public affairs and never held official positions. After Gangu's time the Brahmins of the Dekkhan controlled the finances of Mussulman rulers. Beligious animosities gradually diminished. A Brahmin minister served at the Mussulman court of Abmednagar, and another acted as the confidential adviser to A mir Berid, who ruled at Bidar. This reconciliation reached its acme in the reign of Akbar, who was singularly free from all sectarian prejudices.

The attitude of the Emperor Akbar towards his Hindu subjects was entirely different from that of his predecessors. This change of policy was due to various causes. Akbar was associated from boyhood with Hindus and he was married early to Rajput princesses. He saw that there were good men in all religious and therefore came to the conclusion that men were good or bad from causes quite remote from their religious tenets. His chief counsellor in religious matters, Sbaik Mubarak, was a pupil of an Afghan Mussulman preacher of the Jaunpur school. By freely mixing with the representatives of various faiths and holding discussions wifh them on religious topics, Akbar learnt the merits and demerits of each faith and at the same time studied their differences and felt convinced that there was no special saving power in any one religion. He often said: "He is truly a man who makes justice his guide in the path of inquiry and who culls from every creed what reason approves of. Perchance in this •way that look whose key has been lost maybe opened." Akbar's religion ultimately took a deistic shape tinged with Hindu and Parsi superstitions. Akbar worshipped the sun. Badayuni says: "The Brahmins now composed a new string of the thousand and one names of the sun. They pretended tc consider the emperor an avatar, like Rama or Krishna. They cited texts from their old books, prophesying the birth of a king in India, who would be of foreign extraction, but who would protect cows, patronise Prahmins, and govern the world with justice. They showed these prophesies to Akbar and he gave credit to them." Akbar adopted the doctrine of transmigration. Prince Selim was married, in the presence of the emperor and the law officers, to the daughter of Raja Bhagavan Das according to the Hindu ritual. Of the goods with which the ceremonial weighments of the emperor was effected some were distributed among the Brahmins. He adopted the Parsee Naruz (new-year) festival and some twelve others, and enjoined their observance on his provincial officers. He issued several new enactments. A man was restricted to one wife, unless she proved barren. Widows were permitted to marry again. Widows were not to be compelled to perform mti, but were not to be prevented from voluntary immolation. In all legal causes between Hindus, a Brabmin was to judge; in those between Mohammedans the Kazi. Cows were ordered to be held sacred and cow dung a purifier. The flesh of cows, buffaloes, horses, camels, and sheep was prohibited, but pork was made lawful. Marriage between first cousins was prohibited. The marriage of boys under sixteen, and girls under fourteen, years of age was prohibited. In all marriages the age of the parties should be verified before the Kotwal. Circumcision was to be deferred till the age of twelve, so that no one is made Mussulman till one could judge for oneself. .\11 persons were declared free to choose their own religion, but, if a Hindu female was induced by affection for a man of the Mussulman persuasion, to join that religion, she might be compelled to abandon it and compulsorily reattached to her original creed. Every one was permitted to erect temples, mosques, churches, or tombs, according to one's own inclination. It cannot be asserted that the zeal of Akbar's Hindu advisers had no hand in some of these enactments, such as the sacredness of the oov.' and the purificatory eflScaoy of cow's dung.

Chaitanya was a contemporary oi Akbar and in his

teachings we have a striking illustration of the influenceof Buddhism on Vaishnavism. Buddhism, though decadent, exercised a considerable influence in Bengal and the neighbouring districts during Ghaitanya's time. A biographer of Chaitanya, named Chudamani Dasa, makes Buddhists rejoice at the birth of Chaitanya. One of the great millionaires of Satgao in Chaitanya's time, belonging to the Sonar Bania caste, refused to accept Vaishnavism on the ground that he would not like to be saved, while the whole world round him was plunged in misery, a Buddhist sentiment absolutely unknown to Hinduism. Chaitanya w.'.s born at Navadvipa or Nadia, where in Samskrit Tols the Hindu pandits continued the good work which was carried on at Nalanda and later at Vikrama Sila by the Buddhist monks. Chaitanya acquired a great reputation as a scholar and established a Tol of his own. An atmosphere of scepticism, due to the influence of Buddhism, pervaded the Tols of Nadia. Chaitanya went on a pilgrimage to Gaya, and at the temple ol the feet of Vishnu (Vishnupad) came in contact with a venerable Vaishnava who initiated him into the ohakti cult. He taught that even the out-caste was superior to tha most learned Brahmin if he were pious and had the love of God. It is believed that with a view to win over those who had been attracted by the teaching of Buddhism, as well as those to whom the grosser forms of the popular Hinduism were repellant, Chaitanya laid stress on the doctrine of ahimsa, the duty of avoiding by all means injury to any living thing, and enjoined the equality of all men as a weapon against the established social order, while at the same time it served as an attractive and persuasive appeal to the middle and lower classes, from whom Chaitanya's followers were mainly recruited. A few Mohammedans also became converts to his faith. But the Brahmins stood aloof, as the acceptance of his doctrines implied the surrender of their ancient privileges. Chaitanya was largely influenced by the practices obtaining at the temple of Jagannath at Puri, where he died. A Brahmin sneers at the reforms of the followers of Chaitanya as follows: "In the name of Chaitanya they call upon thirty six castes to dine in the same place; and **the** pariah, washerman, the oilman **and** kotal, all sit down cheerfully to dinner without observing any distinction of castes. They pay one rupee and four annas to a Vaishnava priest and marry a widow with children; and in their community a Mohammedan enjoys precedence,

in regard to caste being regarded as hulin". No wonder that a great number of people who, by adhering to Buddhism, lost all social prestige and were treated as outcastes, readily responded to the brotherly call of the Vaishnavas and gathered under the flag of equality of Nityauanda, the great apostle of Chaitanyism in Bengal in the sixteenth century.

In another respect also Buddhism affected the Vishnayite movement in Bengal. The dominant note of Buddhism is the idea of a higher life inspired by a keen sense of morality coupled with introspection. Buddhism lays great stress on chastity. Chastity may be defined as the control of oneself in sexual matters. The sexual function is natural and its normal discharge can not be immoral. The sexual act is not only agreeable to the individual but often necessary for the fulness of ones physical health. It is indispensible to the perpetuation of life. Strict abstinence will involve not only abstinence from all sexual intercourse, but also freedom from sexual perversities, auto-erotic experiences, and indulgence in erotic imaginations, and voluptuous reveries. The will and earnestness necessary for perfect continence can not be presumed to exist in all individuals. Modern psychology declares that the psychic sex nature embodies instincts and wishes which if suppressed in certain ways may express themselves in abnormal ways injurious to the individual and society. No wonder that later Buddhist books declare that salvation is not possible without the cooperation of woman (strivi/atirekejia). Man and woman must fulfil their common destiny as joint partners in a joyful aim at a higher intellectual and ethical life. For such a partnership woman must be morally, civilly, economically, politically free and the equal of man. Love can not reach a high stage of perfection, if it is not free love. Some such ideas coupled with mysticism gave birth to tha Vajrayana, and later, the Sahajaya forms of Buddhism in Bengal. The lovers are expected to be both pure in heart aud immaculate in morals. But every one knows how difficult it is to control the surging passion of love and remain immaculate. In a society free from caste exclusiveness and stringent marriage laws free love is possible. During the Buddhist times pratiloma marriages, highly condemned by Hindu law-givers, were greatly in vogue. Hinduism could not tolerate such freedom, for it would wreck its whole fabric. The revivalists of Hinduism therefore olassified into a number of sub-castes those who were born of pratiloma marriages and shut the portals of Hindu society against new comers by laying down hard-andfast rules as to intermarriage and interdining. Human nature being the same everywhere, stringent social rules can not be effective in overcoming che charms of free love. The greater the obstacles to free union, the stronger the impulse which tries to find expression in personal choice. In Hindu society women are entirely cut off from men and live either as drudges or as dependent articles of luxury; husbands and wives have often to be bought; and a mute pair join hands without knowing each other. The husband has a jealous sense of ownership of the wife. The ancient custom of lending the wife to a guest, said to have been abolished by Svetaketu, is also a manifestation of this sense of ownership. Adultery is an offence against property, being the illegitimaite appropriation of the exclusive claims of the husband on the wile. As Manu puts it, "seed must not be sown by any man on that which belongs to another." The immolation of a widow with her dead husband and the prohibition of the remarriage of a widow are also the obvious results of the jealousy of proprietorship. Child marriage is evidently a safe mode of obtaining a proprietory right over a woman belore she is able to judge for herself. In such a society there can be few opportunities for the meeting of men and women. Still, suppressed passion will find new resources for satisfying itself, tn Vaishnavite religious circles a new form of hJiakti was evolved. Bhakti became an emotional condition in which the devotee glows with the same uncontrollable desire to meet the deity adored as a lover does for his love, laughs and weeps by turns, and even falls into long trances of unconsciousness. There can be no doubt that the divine raptures experienced in these trances are due to the unconscious activity of some of the organs of sexual life. The literature of this hhakti abounds in sonas and lyrics which have a distinct erotic tinge. Some Puranas have not failed to meet this human weakness. In their zeal for devotion to gods they go so far as to declare that a single utterance of the name of Krishna, Rama, or Siva is enough to wash off many a sin. Thus arose among certain sects the rites of promiscuity and the condonation of adultery. Coupled with the belief in soul and its transmigration this tendency bloomed into Gopis singing, dancing and sporting with Krishna. We may therefore say that the doctrinesof the later Buddhists still linger in the Sahaja Siddhi of the Vaishnavas all over India.

The Mohammedan conquest of Bengal led to the destruction of the two great centres of Buddhistic learning, Odaotapura and Yikrama-Sila. The Buddhist teachers, who were not killed, fled to other countries. Some of the surviving ministers of Buddhism migrated to Orissa (Btkala) and there built new monasteries which helped to arrest the tide of extinction which threatened to engulf Buddhism. Buddhism was the prevailing religion of Orissa till the time of Raja Prataparudra of Utkala in the sixteenth century. Owing to the persecution of the Buddhists by Purushottama and his successor Prataparudra, a large majority of them embraced the Vaishnavism of Chaitanya. But some of their leaders only professed outwardly the Vaishnavite faith, and were in their heart of hearts sincere and staunch votaries of the Buddha. There are six great devotees (dasas) who are generally regarded as the principal Vaishnava poets of Utkala, their works being regarded as the principal Vaishnava literature of the country. When we scrutinise these works, we find that their authors were sincere Buddhists who, for fear of persecution by the Brahmins and their royal patrons, found it necessary to conceal their Buddhism under the guise of Vaishnavism. One of these six liasas, Achyutananda, says in his Sunya Samiiita: "It is desirable in the Kaliyuga that the followers of Buddha should be disguised." Almost all the ancient poets of Orissa refer to Jagannatha or the Dant-Brahma as being one and the same with the incarnation of Buddha. Jagannatha Dasa, one of the above six, says in his Bhagavaiha: "Coming down to the world as the all-wise Buddha the Lord will diffuse knowledge, give up the religion inculcated in the Vedas and promulgate the doctrine of nirgutia. None will then worship maya again, And at this time, all the different castes will again sit together when partaking of boiled rice." So also says Chaitanya Dasa, another of these six, in his Nirguna Mahatmya, after finding fault with all the other incarnations of Vishnu, that the Buddha ia pure and stainless, that "holding works, religious practices, sacrifices, austerities, religious vows, tarpanas, etc., equally useless with respect to the fruits they are expected to yield, he followed simply the sequence of actions, accepting their results unaffected in the least." Twenty two years after tha death of Prataparudra Mukunda Deva (ISo1) ascended the throne. He was a zealous supporter of Buddhism. It is evident from the Yasomati Malika of the Mahima Dharyna sect that Jagannatha, the deity of Puri, passed for Buddha till the first year of the reign of this king. With the close of his reign the Buddhists began to pass their lives in oancealment and seclusion. It is believed that on the close of the reign of Mukunda Deva a massive wall was built up to obstruct the view from the outside of the gigantic statue of Buddha discovered behind what now passes for the temple of Surya Narayana within the very precincts of the temple of Jagannatha. The existence of this statue within the temple and its obstruction irom outside view by a wall bespeaks the past history of the temple.

The son and grandson of Akbar were too indifferent to religion and too dependent upon their Rajput kinsmen to meddle with the religion of the Hindus. But Aurangazib, though humane by nature, was a rigid puritanical Muslim', who was sternly repressive of himself as of the people around him. In his daily life he observed not only the minute details of Muslim ritual but also practised an extreme austerity. He ate no meat, drank only water, kept all the vigils and fasts, passed whole nights in prayer and in reading the Quran in the mosque, gave alms profusely, and was most simple in dress and manners. He detested the dancing of nautch girls, loud conversation and all laxity of morals. He ordered that public women must marry or clear out of the realm. In strict accordance with Mohammed's precept that every Muslim should practice a trade he mude skull caps. With the rigid puritanism of a Muslim was coupled an indomitable will, a cool courage, and a self-sacrificing sincerity, which prepared him to stake his throne for the sake of his faith. For any doctrine which pretends to absolute certitude established by faith intolerance—doctrinally always, practically when circumstances permit it—is a vital condition. How could such a rigid Muslim as A.urangazib tolerate idolatrous practices? He therefore ordered the destruction of Hindu temples. The governors of provinces were strictly enjoined to put a complete stop to the teaching and practising of idolatrous forms of worship. The destruction of tho temple of Adi Visvesvara at Benares and the erection of a stately mosque thereon began the storm. The Hindu devotees, called Satnamis (adorers of the true name) rebelled, but the rebellion was sternly suppressed. The imposition of the intolerable jizya or poll-tax on all non-Muslims turned the whole Hindu population against Aurangazib. An interference with the infant princes of Marwar led to the loss of Rajput loyalty. Through the energy of 'Sivaji a new Hindu power came into existence. The Brahmins hailed Sivaji as the champion of Hinduism (go brahman pratipalak). Though he belonged to the Sudra stock, the Brahmins, though they had declared that Kshatriyas had been extirpated long ago, fabricated for Sivaji a Kshatriya pedigree and invested him with the sacred thread, the distinctive badge of the twice-born caste. But in their usual way the Brahmins did not teach him the true mantras or rules of life of the twice born so that in this respect he might not be put on a level with them. Ail the same Sivaji lavished enormous sums of money on the Brahmins and posed as their chatrapati. Sivaji "wished to save from Moghul attack a Hindu society, ot which ceremonial distinctions and isolation of castes were the very breath of life. He wanted to make this heterogeneous mass triumphpmt all over India! He wove ropes of sand; he attempted the impossible. It is beyond the power of any man, it is opposed to the divine law oi the universe to establish the sivaraj of such a casteridden, isolated, internally-torn sect over a vast continent like India."

While Aurangazib was struggling to restore order, trouble arose in another quarter. By his order Teg Bahadur, the father of Guru Govind Singh, the tenth aud last Guru of tbe Sikhs, was murdered at Belhi. This created in the latter a bitter animosity towards Mohammedans with whom his four predecessors were in conflict. Guru Govind was brought up as a Hindu devotee of the goddess Durga and does not seem to have troubled himself with the teachings of his predecessors. He devoted himself entirely to reorganising the Sikhs on a lighting basis and converted the whole body of Sikhs into an army, named the Khalsa (the pure), and conferred on each member of tbe body his own name singh (lion). Guru Govind also abolished caste distinctions among his followers, and admitted into his army men from all castes.

Had it not been for the Rajputs and the Mahrattas Hinduism would have collapsed during the reign of Aurangazib. Outside oi Rajaputana and Maharashtra the amorphous character of Hinduism gave it enough strength to

survive the blow inflicted by the Mohammedan invasion. Buddhism collapsed when its monasteries were barnt and its monks were slain. But Hinduism had no centre of religious life, no single administrative body, whose destruction might have caused a general collapse. Its caste organization, its perpetual round of ceremonial observances which make Hinduism more a social polity than a religion, enabled it to survive. The strength of caste is such that many of tha religious reformations in India, which started with the assertion of equality of mankind and the abolition of caste, have in course of time succumbed to the distinctions of caste. The members of the Lingajdt sect protest at the present day against all of them being grouped together and demand a differentiation into Brahmins, Kshatriyas, Vaisj^as and Sudras. Though Kabir preached against caste, the modern Kabir Panthis prefer that members of unclean castes should join other sects, and should not wear the rosary of wooden beads which mark their own members, and those that claim to belong to the twice born castes wear the sacred thread of the Hindus. There is a great tendency on the part of the Sikhs to conform to official Hinduism. Among those professing to be followers of Chaitanya, caste has reasserted its sway, and the higher castes maintain their rigid exclusiveaess and separation from the lower. Though caste is unknown to the Mohammedan religion, yet it exists in full force amongst many of the Mohammedans of Upper India and in all parts of the country amongst the functional groups that form the lower strata of the community. Mohammedanism, ia contact with Buddhism, gave birth to Sufism with its pantheism, its idealism and its universal tolerance. And this in its turn enabled the Mohammedan to meet the animism of the Hindu by the worship of saints, their tombs and relics.

Buddhism still exists in India in various corrupt forms. During the reign of Dharmapala II in the eleventh century Ramai Pandit, Lausena, and others introduced a form of popularised Buddhism under the name of Dharma Thakurapuja for tho worship of Dharma, the chief member of the Buddhist triratna (Buddha, Dharma, Samgha). To extol the night of Dharma they composed the Sunya Purana and the several Dharmamangalas. The Sunya Purana of Ramai Pandit lays down the rules for Dharma worship. Among these rules one is that Dharma Raj condemns sacrifices. In one passage of this book it ia stated that Dharma Raj is held

in high veneration in Ceylon and in another we read that Dharma Raj is the Lalita Avatara, reminding us of the biography iu Samskrit of the Buddha known as the Lalita vistara. There can therefore be no doubt about the identity of Dharma Thakur with Buddha. In Bengal at the present day there is a very large member of lower class people, who are called Doms. These do not acknowledge the superiority of the Brahmins and are consequently looked down upon by the latter. All their religious ceremonies are performed by pandits of their own class, who are the constituted purohits of Dharma. The temples of Dharmaraja, found in large numbers in South India, apparently owe their origin to this form of Buddhism, The priests of these temples are also men of low class, Saraki Tantis, found in the districts of Cuttack, Puri, Bankura, Burdwan, still worship Buddha along with the Brahminic deities. The word saraki is Prakrit form ot the word sravaka. There was a revival of Buddhism in Orissa during the last quarter of the nineteenth century under the name of Mahima Dharma (Alekha Dharma). A man ot low class, Bhima Bhoi Arakshitadasa, who earned his livelihood by manual labour, preached his casteless doctrine about Sunya through poetical works and charming bymns. Within a few years he made thousands of followers and his influence became so great that he led the people of about thirty villages upon Puri durios; the time of its Raja Divyasimha Deva with the express object of making known the real character of Jagannatha as Luddha. The Raja, reinforced by a body of police officers, routed the Mabima-Dharmins, and some of those that were captured were transported on charges of murder by the British government. After this event the followers of this religion, tearing persecution, took refuge in the hills and Gadajats of the forests of Orissa, One of their books, the Yaso)natimalika, says: " In the KaUyuga the devotees are passing their lives in disguise, though they have not yet seen the form of the incarnation of the Buddha, in the hope that the gUdi ot the Sunya will be eatabUshed in the province of Behar and there the Lord Alekha will through his creative power assume the form of a human being in the incarnation for the good ot his devotees, who will thus attain emanioipation,' It is noteworthy that Buddhism has everywhere and always stood against caste distinctions.

Christianity under the aegis of a Christian government is making rapid progress among the illiterate masaea. Though

it makes a boast of the fatherhood of God and the brotherhood of man, yet-it has not given sulficien: strength to its followers to overcome easte prejudices. Tha Christian Church made no attempt to correct the narrowness of caste prejudice, but accepted the ranks of the Soman empire and the divisions of the feudal system. The Roman Catholic Church in India allows their converts to retaili their original caste distinctions. Some Roman Catholic missionaries deliberately accepced the role ol yogi to make converts. Though the Protestant missionaries forbid casta distinctions, yet they have not wholly succeeded in obliterating these distinctions Says a recent writer in a Christian missionary magazine: " it is an extraordinarily difficult matter, a matter in which we must distinguish between what is ideally right and practically expedient. We ask, why is this? It is not due to the dislike of the clean for the dirty, nor of the cultured for the barbarous. We are forced then to the answer that the reason of the cleavage between black and white is to ba found in an instinctive colour prejudice. It is the instinctive antipathy, which explains why quite devout English will oot sit down to table with a cleanly well-dressed black man." In aloofness from the moral and spiritual struggle of millions oi their fellows these Caristian missionaries are no better than Brahmins. Ghristiauity has not been able to prevent Christian nations irom exploiting helpless people and setting the world atlama with hate and war. As M. Loisy puts it, Ghristiauity has "passed over the world like a happy dream of immortality without leaving a trace of that law of love which it vaunted aa peculiarly its own." Christianity to-day has no moral power left and means little more than hypocritical attachment to puerile dogma. It expects you either to receive some 'kingdom of heaven" like a little child or to prostrate your intellect before a a infaUible authority. It is an antiintellectual religion and can not shake itself off from the spirit of its founders. It can do nothing with people with any pretentions to c.dture. Its spread among ths ignorant is due to the connection of its missionaries with tha ruling class, to their masquerading in the garb of Western civilization, and to the elaborate organizations which employ their .ntluenoe in many insidaous ways to propagate spiritual slavery and its concommitant political and industrial slavery. Those who boast of the civilizing power of Christianity have only to be reminded of filthy, barbarous and superatitioua

Abyssinia •whare unadulterated pristine Christianity has swayed for centuries without the influence of the Eenaissance and the non-Christian thinkers. Christianity plunged Europe for twelve centuries into the appalling misery and ignorance of the Dark Ages. The improved morality of Christian countries goes band in hand with scientific appliances and democracy. In spite of its modern apologists Christianity is incapable of popularizing the ideas of fraterrity and equality. Mohammedanism, which is a mixture of Christianity and Judaism, adapted to the traditions and temperament of the Arabs, is far superior in this respect. The Reman Catholic Church canonised the Buddha under the name of St. Josaphat, which name has been proved to be no other than a corruption of lodhisattva. Indian Christianity is gradually taking a "Vedantic colouring.

The contact of Hinduism with Christianity and the assimilation of the results of Western thought by educated Hindus have given birth to different reconstructions of Hinduism in order to adapt it to new conditions. The result of one such reconstruction is the Brahma Samaj founded by •Raja Ram Mohan Eal. Ram Mohan early made the acquaintance of the Christian missionaries at "Serampore, and in rendering help in the translation of the New Testament into Bengali be was unable to accept the meaning put by the missionaries on certain passages. However, one of the missionaries took his side and he professed Cnitarianism. A Unitarian society was started and worked for several years hut without success, as it held its services in English. The failure of this society led to the establishment of a Samaj with services in the vernacular. The con.grfgational worship, common in Mohammedanism and Christianity, was introduced into Hinduism, and the service consisted in the reading of the Upanishads, a sermon, and the singing of hymns. Ram Mohan Rai was also an ardent social reformer, and worked hard against polygamy and for the remarriage of Hindu widows. He was mainly instrumental in inducing Lord Pentinck to put down the inhuman custom of sati, the burning cf a Hindu widow on the funeral pyre of her husband. Though a man cf large sympathies, he was too much of a Hindu to renounce caste. He did not remove the Brah-Qiinical sacred thread and when he visited England he tcck vritb him a ccck to prepare his food in accordance with caste legtiiations. After his death in Bristol in 1833 the cause steadily deciyed, bat the liberality of Priaoe Dwaraka Nath Tagore kept it up.

In 1811 the Samaj received new life by the acoession to its ranks of Debandra Nath Tagora and his friends who formed mambars of the Tashvabodhini Sibha. Unlike Bam Mohan who appsalad to tha Ohristiaa Bible as well as the Hindu Veda, Debandra desired to be wholly a Hiadii. In 1343 Debendra declared: "We consider the Vodis, and the Vedas alone, as the standard of our faith." The society thus tended to bscoma a Vedic Samaj and one of its aims was also the arrest of the progress of Christianity which began to make, headway through the educational institutions opeaed b/ Christian missionaries. But a closer and deeper study of the Vedas led to tho abindonmaafc of the Vedas as tha standard of the Brahma faith and to the acjeptaaoa of uiitare and intuition as the only sourcas oi tha kaowleige of Gild as a personal being with sublime mora,l attributes, who cin ba worshipped by all castes and races in spiritail ways. In 18'j7 Keshab Chandra Sen joined the Simaj and ha influenced Dabauura to change his Hindu proclivities. Debandra gave up the Brahminical thread and workad out for the use ot tho Samaj domestic rites freed from Hindu caremonialism and idolatry. The practice of permitting only Brahmins to lead the services was set aside and Keshab Chandra Sen, though not a Brahmin, was ordained a miaisser. It was also arranged that no minister should ba allowei to wear the sacred thread. BoUow.ag the example of Keshab some of the members of the SamLJ began to give their wives mora liberty ia defiance of all tlindu custom. Debsndra's Hiadu temperamant inclined him mora to the spiritualizing of religion than to changes demanded by the social health of the people. Ha was therefore against enforcing the regulation about the giving up ot the sacred thread by those who led the devotions of the Samaj. This led to a schism and his party left tha Simaj.

A new Samaj was founded in 1833 with the distinct motive of rising above the limitations of the Hiadu system to a rational faith which would give complete iutallectual and social freedom. The service was remodelled. Beside.? tha usual prayer and hymas, it iacludad tha railing ot passages from tae Hinia, Cariatiau. Maham.nadin. Zoro.istriaa aal Coafaciaa Siriataras which agraai with tha prinJiples ot Brahmtisji. Tha excseiiagly em^tioasil nitura of Ka3hib

made prayer one of his joys and necessities. His early Vaishnavite training turned his mind towards hhakti, which became the watchword of the new movement. Vaishnavite modes of worship were introduced, the singing of hymns being accompanied by musical instruments. The Vaishnavite nagarkirtan or procession through the streets with flags flying and drums beating, with chorus singing and dancing, was bodily taken over. To the two sources of knowledge of God recognised by Debendra's A'di Samaj Keshab added a third, namely, God in history speaking through great men. He declared that inspiration (adesa) formed a means by which God revealed His will on special occasions though His servants. These ideas appeared to some members of his Samaj to imply a kind of gurupnija and autocracy, while they wanted a democratic regime in the Samaj. While Keshab allowed women to be present at services, be -was not inclined to give them greater liberty and allow them the benefits of university education. To avoid a breach in the Samaj he laid great stress on vairagtja or separation from the things of this world. But a flagrant violation of his own principles against child-marriage and idolatrous ceremonies in giving away his minor daughter in marriage to a minor Hindu prince forced a large number of men of character and influence to leave Keshab and form a third Samaj, consisting wholly of those who were willing to renounce caste and give up Hindu rites in their domestic occurrences.

The Adi Saviaj of Debendra, owing to its endeavour to remain within the caste system, lost its individuality and withered. Keshab's fantastic Neiv Dispensation has a comparatively small following. The Satharana Samaj, the third Samaj, stands completely outside the caste system and scrupulously avoids every contact with Hindu ritualism and worship. The Prarthana Samajes of Western India resemble the Sadharana Samaj, but they have not completely renounced the caste system. The census report of 1900 says: "Many who are really Brahmos, other than those of the Sadharana Brahma Saviaj sect, prefer to describe themselves as Hindus."

An indigenous reforming religious movement, very popular in Northern India at the present day, is the *Arya'Samaj* founded by Swami Dayanand Saraswati In bis wanderings through British India Dayanand was impressed deeply by railways, canals, telegraph wires, steam engines and other

inventions ol modern soienoe. But his mind was saturated with the spirit of India as embodied in the Vedas, the Sutras and tho epics. When he compared the indigenous religion of India, namely, Hinduism, with the religions of foreign origin, namely. Islam and Christ'anity, he found the former to consist of a vast congeries of faiths, ranging from the Advaita Vedanta of Samkara to the crudest and grossest superstitions, the whole being held together in a kind of superficial unity by the hierarchical organization of caste. He desired to effect a synthesis between the past culture of India and the science of the West. He found the method of doing this in the assumption that the Vedas as the revealed word of God must contain the basic principles of all the sciences. On this assumption every scientific discovery and invention must be found expressed, germinally at least, in tha Vedas. The Bast was endowed with the faculty of seeing and to the West was attributed the faculty of doing or realizing. Hence the West, in realizing the principles laid down in the Vedas, Was only unconsciously following the Vedic religion. Not only were the Vedas the revealed source of all the sciences, but they also formed the fountain head oi religion, as they formed a primitive revelation given once for all to mankind. Thus by an audacious and uncritical assumption has Dayanand attempted to solve the age-long confliot between religion and science. The fundamental principle of the Arya Samaj is the eternity of God, soul, and matter; karma is inexorable, and by means of transmigration each individual soul attains salvation by its own effort. God merely presides over the inexorable process of transmigration and Karma. The Arya Samaj has rejected idolatry, superstitions ceremonies, and pantheism with its doctrines of illusion and absorption. It is fighting vigorously against oaste, child marriage and intemperance and showing a praiseworthy enthusiasm for education and social reform. By its pretentious claim that the Vedas are the original source of all the sciences and religions of the world it is ministering to the patriotic spirit of the Hindus. "The person who oppugns the Vedas and the works written by great sa^es in consonance with the Vedas should be driven away as an atheist from the company of the virtuous—tribe, society and country.' It keeps in close touch with Hinduism through the fact of many of its members not having broken caste. It employs preaching, education, tract distribution, newspapers and all otter methods of work current among various missionary bodies all over the world. Unlike the Brahma Samaj it has adopted towards Christianity and Mohammedanism an attitude of hostility rather than of eclecticism Swaraj is declared to be essential to its propagation. "Swaraj is as essential for Vedas as air for men. It is impossible to spread the Vedas without Swaraj (Vedic chakravartiraj). No religion has spread without political power; Swaraj is therefore an inevitable and unshakable means of propagating the Vedic religion". No wonder that it has the support of advanced political parties in Northern India.

Two other movements, which have come into being in recent years in support of Hinduism, are more apologetic than reformatory. They are not very enthusiastic about social reform. Both of them are staunch advocates of the doctrines of Karma and transmigration. They give succour to tbe devout polytheist who is fondly attached to rites and customs. They ask the modern educated Hindu not to reject and despise the religion of the multitude, but to practise diligently the ceremonies of their fathers. They do not work energetically towards the elevation of women, whose ignorance forms the prop of Hinduism. They silently accept the system of caste and even try to defend it, because caste as an organised social system gives Hinduism strength to resist assaults upon the rationality or the truth cf its doctrinal tenets. These two movements may be described as expressions of the wily nonchalance of the Hindu towards his festering political humiliation. One of these two movements is the new development of Vedanta taught by Sri Ramakrishna Paramahamsa and expounded by his disciple Swami Vivekananda; the other may be called "theosophical" Hinduism.

The message of Ramakrishna Paramahamsa as expounded by Swami Vivekananda is as follows: "Do not care for doctrines, do not care for dogmas, or sects, or churches, or temples; they count for little compared with the essence of existence in each man, which is spirituality, and the more, that is developed in a man, the more powerful he is for good." He repudiates the characterization of Hinduism as polytheism. "In every temple, if one stands by and listens, one will find the worshippers apply all the attributes of God—including omnipresence—to the images. This is not polytheism." He does not repudiate ^idolatry, but offers an explanation in support of it. The devout worshipper before

an idol "recognises in it a necessary stage of his life. The child is the father of the man. Would it be right for the old man to say that childhood is a sin or youth a sin? Nor is image worship compulsory in India." The ideal religion is what the Hindus call Yoga, "union between God and man, union between the lower self and the higher self. To the worker it is union between man and the whole of humanity; to the mystic, between the lower and the higher self: to the lover union between him and the God of love; and to the philosopher it is union in all existence." Because Hindu mythology has a "theory of cycles that all progression is in the form of waves," so it is consistent with the principle of evolution. The absence of any special founder in Vedanta is taken as giving it a claim ior universal acceptance. Tha teaching of the Vedanta is said to be "in entire harmony with the results which have been attained by the modern scientific investigations of external nature." The attitude of this renovated Vedantism towards social reform is clear from the following utterance of its exponent: " Most of our modern reform movements have been inconsiderate imitations ot Western means and methods of work, and that surely will not do for India." Thus there is no repudiation of caste, child-marriaJre and other baneiul social practices.

Theosophical Hinduism originated in the Central Hindu College under the aegis of Mrs Annie Besant. Hinduism, under the name of sanatanadharma (eternal religion), is claimed to be the oldest of the world religions, eternal because the truths taught by it are eternal. It depends upon the four Vedas and other scriptures written by rishis, such as the Laics of Mann, the Puranas, the Mahabharata and the Raniayana. There is one boundless eternal being, Brahmam, or Parabrahmam, who is known only when revealed as Isvara, "the Lord, tho loving Bather of all the worlds, and of the creatures which live in them." He helps us to know him " by taking different forms, each of which shows us a little portion of Him." These forms are the three great dcvas-Brahma, Vishnu and Siva. He also manifests himself in the form oi devas and devis~\a.ya (wind); Agni (firej; Varuna (water); Kubera: and so forth. Besides these are Sarasvati and Ganesa, "who will help us to learn, if we ask them." God lives in us, in our hearts, in our inner self. He shines out on us when we are loving and pure, and is clouded when we are crude or unclean. "He hves in all animals, and even

in plants and atones. He is everywhere, helping every oneand everything, and we can not do harm to any without hurting Him." He shows himself in incarnations (avatara), and He has done so specially in the manifestations of Vishnu. Man is both spirit (Jiva) and body. As the jiva is a portion of Tsvara it oan not die; at death Jiva leaves the body behind 'like a worn out cloth' and goes into the other world dressed in other bodies. Then it puts off another of these and "goes on to svarga, and is very happy there, till the svarga body is also worn out." In the next world a very good person is happy, "but does not stay long"; but a bad person is very unhappy, suffers a great deal, and has to stay there along time. When the svarga. body is burnt out, the Jiva, helped by the devas, begins to make some new bodies for himself, as a man might get new clothes, then it comes back to the earth and is born in a new baby body. The conditions of its new birth are determined by its desires, thoughts and actions in its previous lives, according to the law of Karma. AU Hindu religious rites and practices are defended. The mantra is " a succession of sounds in a definite order, arranged so as to bring us help and protection from Isvara, or from some deva or devi." The order of sounds is important because "it notes are played in a particular order, we have a tune; if the order is changed, the tune is spoiled," If a mtintra be translated into another language, it loses its use, because a non-Indian tune oan not be effectively played on an Indian musical instrument, as the latter has not all the notes that the Indian one has. Sacraments (samskara) are "ceremonies performed at particular times during life to make the bodies more useful to ihe Jiva." The srAddha helps the yivo. "to pass quickly through the world into which he goes at death, and to reach the happy world of svarga much sooner than he would do if he were left to himself. ' It is evident that this movement is strongly apologetic and designed to defend every thing in Hinduism on the basis of what the "theosophist"calls "occult" science.

The British administration of India has in no way tended to weaken the power of caste. The British Government does not profess to modify the civilization of India by spreading Western culture. Its primary object is to secure advantages for Britain by assuring to the Indians security and peace Being the lineal descendant of a mercantile company, the British Government of India possesses many of

the traits of its progenitor. Its home is not India but England. Britain does not retain India in the interests of its people but for its own prestige among the nations of the world. For the exploitation of the country and the maintenance of peace the applications of science have been introduced but their introduction has in no way brought about the removal of caste prejudices. As Risley points out in his People of India, "in late years the strength of the Hinduizing movement has been greatly augmented by the improvement of communications. People travel more, pilgrimages can be easily made, and the influence of the orthodox section of society is thus more widely diffused. Railways, in particular, which are sometimes a solvent for caste prejudices, have in fact enormously extended the area within which these prejudices reign supreme." Those castes which possess claims to social eminence are most tenacious in asserting and maintaining them. Those below the "twice born 'classes are endeavouring to claim equality with them. Even the untouchable despised classes are quite prepared to go into the caste system if its doors would be opened to them. The prestige of the Brahmin still continues to be the centre of magnetization of the divided Hindu society. Though there is in some parts of India much irritation between the secularised Brahmin and the non-Brahmin Hindu for the former's possession of many of the loaves and fishes and even crumbs of Government service, yet the latter has not budged an inch to throw off the heavy shackles which have been inflicted on him for centuries by the caste system. Even in the matter of ofBce-climbing all non-Brahmin Hindus are not of one mind. The division of Hindu society into mutually exclusive compartments has made it incapable of coalescing for active resistance. The subtle political wisdom of the Anglo-Indian oflBoials has not failed to perceive in the caste system a reason for the immobility of Hindu society and an advantage for bringing people to obedience and therefore for ruling the country. As has been remarked by many an English statesman, the secret of Britain's political position in India is ip the diversity of creed, race and caste existing side by side. While the Brahminic State was the embodiment of principles and methods based on caste differences, racial discrimination marks British rule in India. Further racial preference characterises British administration everywhere In the British Empire Canada, South Africa, Austraha and New Zealand

are entirely independent and in a position to secede at any moment, bat Ireland, Egypt, India are retained by the sword and not allowed to govern themselves.

Though under the constitutional British Government there is much individual freedom, the laws are not such as to facilitate intermarriage and bring about the peaceful amalgamation of castes and creeds. Nor has any attempt been made to provide for the young that kind of education which would help to prepare them to form independent judgments and eventually break up the stagnation of the masses of the people. Since the Crown took the government over from the Company, the declared policy is the preparation of the people of India for responsible self-government. But no attempt has been made by the Government to dot the country with those school houses which are the indispensable preliminary to a new social and political order. More money has been spent on the police, the magistracy, the C. I. D., the secret spy system, and the military organization than on education. The organization of services in India on British standards and the undue gap at the top between the emoluments of ofBce and the standards of life cause such a great strain on the finances of the country as to lead one to doubt the possibility of aiiy education of the masses under the present methods. \\Yithin fifty years Japan claims to have emerged from "a primitive and purely oriental civilization into a progressive community possessing all the equipment, technical knowledge and resources of a modern State." In the Phillipines in a little more than tweniy years under the government of the United States seventy per cent of the population above ten years can read and write. But under the British administration of India for a period of more than one hundred and fifty years only about ten per cent among men and one per cent among women are able to read and write. Even the little education that has been given is wrongly conceived and forms just the minimum required tor conducting a foreign government. Education has been imparted with a view to furnish men for the various branches ct the Government service. It has made young men look to the State to provide and administer all the necessary services, to exalt clerkship and despise craftmanship. It has brought into existence a large number of olEceseekers and a superfluity of adepts in the art ot making black look white, but not capable of increasing the country's wealth. The baneful result ia that the percentage

of population enjoying elementary education is the lowest in any country, while the percentage of males enjoying university education is little below that of England. This anomaly has led to the transference of power into the bands of a class who are using that power in their own interests. The aristocracy of ofEce everywhere endeavours to monopolize the State-machine. Those who possess political power are liable to the temptation of using it for personal or sectional ends, and oflSce often comes to he h'oked upon as affording opportunity for the accumulation of spoil rather than an occasion for service to the people. Political philosophy has apparently no other function than to supply weapons to the contending parties in the never-ending but ever shifting struggle for power. What could political reform avail in the absence of that mass education on which alone might be based the systematic economic and social reforms so necessary to improve the condition of man? Political rights, however broadly framed they may be, can not elevate people individually low-minded. "It is not by setting up polling bcoiis, but by setting up schools and making literature and knowledge and news universally accessible that tho way is opened from servitude and confusion to that willing cooperative State which is the modern ideal." The foundation of society is mutual co-operation, which can be brought about only by an educational process, that will destroy the caste-spirit and the savage egoism that produces in the white man an air of arrogance towards his darker brother, in the world of to-day committed necessarily and rightly to majority rule, our only hope lies in education, in the inculcation of social responsibility, in the development of personality. Without a system of education equally accessible to all there can be no complete and genuine democratization of the State.

The loud cry in the country for national education is indicative more of a dissatisfaction with the British Government than of any definite and positive ideas about the educational needs of the people. The political despair of an emasculated people and the material misery of an impoverished country have engendered the idea of reversion to the practices of a pre-mechanistic age as well as the cry for a meaningless national education. The factors of nationality are the belief in a common origin; the possession of a common janguage and literature; the pride that is felt in common

historic traditions, in the memories of a common political history and of common struggles against foreign foes; community of religion; and community of social customs. To the motley peoples of India not one of these can be regarded as rigorously applicable. No doubt the British administration has brought the inhabitants of a very large portion of India under one government. But that c.xnnot be said to constitute the Indians into a nation. Political allegiance to one government and submission to one lav? are the cbaraoteristics of a State. But State and natiou are two notions fundamentally different. The idea of a State has a politicodegal significance and implies merely the union of a portion of mankind into one body politic. On the other hand the idea of a nation involves the oneaess of culture and implies the binding together of a similar portion of mankind by other than mere political ties. Nationality does not depend upon but tranoends political allegiance, religious belief and economic interest. Nationality is a form of consciousness of kind which binds men together irrespective of their political allegiance, religious beliefs and economic interests. As a French writer recently put it, "a nationality is neither a territory, nor a race, nor a language, nor a history; it is a will to unite in the present and to endure indefinitely in the future." In other words a nation is animated by a common purpose to be something distinct and to preserve its identity. Responsible self-government seems to be the only common aim actuating the thinking sections of the heterogeneous peoples of India. The only means of achieving this end is education. All education must aim at bringing about the best possible conditions on this planet. Every living healthy system of education must have behind it a social ideal. An educational system worthy of the name must give to every child a chance of growing up into a good and healthy man or woman, fully developed in mffid and body. It is the main business of all education to free the mind from shackles and kindle the undymg fire ot liberty, and it is the subordinate business of special training to train young people to realise their central purpose in a particular form ot service to their fellows. However necessary specialization may be, education must tit every man to maintain his human dignity. Education must stand for liberty, the widest possible individual freedom of thought and action. It must wean the mind from the supernatural, to which it turns for the explanation of what it does not understand. It must dispel the fear of invisible powers and guide man from intellectual darkness to light. It must be the great instrument of social change. It must destroy the fissiparous caste and bring about corporate life, corporate growth and corporate self-respect which are so essential to the development of nationality. In a country where a group of men has tricked or forced the rest into believing that the knowledge of truth is open to that group alone on account of special qualifications given to it by birth, the education of the masses is of greater importance than government. Further, in principle the State exists for man, and not man for the State. It is the business of government to provide the conditions of peace, security and freedom in which progress can take place. The world ia moved by ideas. If these ideas are in harmony with the striving exurgent world-forces, they are vital and will serve to elevate the type of man. But if they are imposed by men who seek wealth and luxury, economic domination, royal trappings, or priestly authority, they generate their own toxins and serve to degenerate the type of man. "The true view of the universe must be opened to the population oi India, even though it should seem to blot out and cancel all the conceptions in which they lived for three thousand years. Such is the awful Nemesis of a system which arrests change too long and too successfully !"

The so-called nationalists of a nationless India boast that the social system of India was perfected thousands ot years ago and console themselves by attributing all their miseries to the toreign invasions. But they forget that these invasions have been possible only through the emasculation wrought by spiritual and social slavery. Freedom stands on personality, and personality is bound up with control of the conditions of one's work, so that one may express himself in his product. There is no need for freedom in a society in which a few men decide everything for all the rest. When caste and status delimit life, men are driven to be either fools or hypocrites. No democracy can be built on restrictions which hinder individual liberty and free association. No democracy can grow in a social environment in which the distinction of interiors and superiors forms an essential and permanent idea. As Mr. Rabmdranath Tagore puts it, " the social habit of mind which impels us to make the life of our fellow beings a burden to them when they differ from us even in such a thing as choice of food, is sure to persist in our political organization and result in creating engines of coercion to crush every rational difference which is the sign of life." The ultimate appeal of democracy must always be to men's consciences. But when the conscience is not free, of what avail could the appeal to it be? It is of the essence of caste that, instead of recognising the inviolability of the individual conscience, it constrains and penalises an honest conscience. Democracy is not merely a form of government but a mode of association, of living together. It is what leads to comradeship within one'rf gates between the servant and the master, the landlord and the tennant, the millionaire and the plough-boy. Democracy represents the spirit of personal equality and fraternity.

As the system of castes is the most vigorous of the causes of social disintegration, it has stood in the way of developing among the Hindus any principle ol cohesion or any motive for unity. It has prevented the growth of all idea of patriotism, so that there is not in the Samskrit language nor in the vernaculars of India any old word to represent that sentiment which in other countries has been the incentive for much heroism. Common political life, characteristic of a nation, has been produced in all the recognised nations of the world by the freest intermingling and fusing of the different smaller groups inhabiting a common territory. The modern civilizing tendency towards unity can not be produced by a system whose fundamental principle is isolation. By forbidding intermarriage between the different castes the system of caste has rendered social fusion impossible. Every caste lives for itself with no feelings of commiseration and pity for the sufferings of other castes. This parcelling of the Indian population has produced baneful results. The peculiar peril of a society organised on the basis of caste is anarchy. The dread of anarchy has led to absolute monarchy as the strongest defence against it. The traditional Hindu theory of kingship is rooted in caste and necessarily requires the presence of an absolute ruler, uniting in his own person all legislature for the purpose of enforcing the rules of the The tiny self-governing republics which existed in Ancient India seem never to have come under the influence ot Brahminism. The exclusion of most of tbe castes from sharing in the political life of the country has left little room for the growth of feelings of common interest and public spirit. The caste system, which is born of the most abject spiritual slavery, has resulted in the political slavery

of the Hiodas. The Hindus, who have waived their rights in allowing the Brahmins to determine for them the laws under which they should live, have lost their freedom and become servile. The country in which the great right of being one's own master has been systematically suppressed has become a factory ot slaves fit only'for foreign domination. The vast continent of India with its hundreds of millions ot inhabitants has for centuries been the prey of predatory conquerors. Foreigners have been able to ravage the country with fire and sword with the aid ot soldiers raised in the country itself. A small body of foreigners suffices to keep in check a host a thousand times stronger than itself. The Hindus have been subject to foreign rale tor such a long time that they have become indifferent as to who rules them, whether he be an Englishman sitting in London, or a Frenchman sitting in Paris, or one of themselves sitting in Delhi. With sjch people what could a mere change in the legislative machine effect? A stroke of the pen can alter an institution, but would it modify the mentality of a people? Priest-ridden, karma-obsessed, maya-enslaved mentaHty is the source of all the miseries under which the Hindus are groaning-. Spiritual slavery, fatalism and superstition have smothered all power of self-reliance and all sense of freedom. Unless a people long for freedom and strenuously Iwork tor it, they caa not obtain it. A free people will always have the government it deserves.

The spirit of intransigent division which is chiracteristioot caste has not only rendered impossible all superior organization, but it has also sunk the Hindus into a state ot intellectual immobility. As Grozier has pointed out, "where caste is absolute and the barriers that separate class from class are insurmountable, mere rank is everything;, and practical intellect, initiative, originality, and enterprise, being alike unavailing to help a man out of the sphere in which he was born, are held in a minimum ot regard The consequence is that these nations have long sunk into a settled and abiding intellectual stagnation." The spirit of caste is inimical nob only to the growth of national unity but also to the emanicipation of the individual. It condemns to atrophy the class of men who have become great in the West through their literary and scientific labours. It knows neither the combative eloquence ol the public man nor history which reminds people ot the great events of the collective life. It ignores those

personal effusions which represeni; the concords and discords of man with himself. Rarely do we come across any literature which is the expression of characrer freely exercised in choice. In the economic sphere the result has bean no better. The multitude of irksome restrictions imposed by the system of castes upon the individual in his public and private life has not only tended to limit production, but it has also destroyed adaptability and rendered inoperative those laws of supply and demand which connect communities with natural resources. A searching examination ol every sphere ol life forces on all the conclusion that the system of castes, though it may enable by the very order it imposes on a society to emerge out of barbarism, hinders further development by crushing under its own weight the germs of further development into civilization. There can be no oiviHzation without individual freedom. The stability and contentment observed in Hindu society is merely an index of the lack of energy in the people to push themselves forward. A people that rebels is a people that is looking up, that has begun to hope and feel its strength. It is a physical principle that the most stable condition of a system is that in which its potential energy is a minimum. Such a system is incapable of moving itself. This truth is equally applicable to human societies. The most contented and stagnant societies are the most stable. Caste destroys all power of determination a fronte. person who habitually lives in the notions of caste becomes more or less incapacitated for breadth and delicacy of perception. Class views of any kind inevitably narrow the mind and hinder it from receiving pure truth. The love and pursuit of culture carries each one of us out of his class, to sympathise with the Bufferings of all and work for their elevation.

Attempts have been made to buttress oaste by scientific prc's. Caste, it is contended, has an ethnic basis. The Samskrit word lor caste being varna, which literally means oolour, it is urged that between the higher castes, the so-ealled Aryans, and the lower oastea, there is a racial eppoaition, more or less absolute, ftrising from a difference in colour. Hundred and fifty years ago John Hunter canae to the conclusion that the original colour of man'i skin waa biaok, and all the physiological knowkfdge &at baa been gathered since hie time supports the infereace be drew. The mioroscope reveala no difference betwran the blond « B d the bkek. The haman fan, wtothvitbethe akiiiofibe darkest N«'ie oreftiM

-whicest European, always contains only dark pigment. The colour cf the white European is not produced by milk or the ichor of the gods of antiquity. The pigment ia everywhere **tbe** same, and it is always dark. It differs not in quality **but** only in quantity. In some cases the quantity of pigment is so large that it makes its appearaaca on the surface, while in other cases it lies bidden in the deeper layers. But the pigment is never absent. The new born bibes of all people are of the same colour. The colour of the skin changes with the climate. A large stay in the tropics tarns the skin of the European brown, while the skin of the Negro becomes perceptibly bleached by long residence in the temperate zone. The majority of the Brahmins are neither lighter in colour nor better featured than the members of the other castes. As Mr. Nesfield says, th'y are not distinct in race and blood from the scavengers who sweep the road. Anthropometric measurements show that the cephalic index of the 'twice born " does not sensibly differ from the eaphabe index of the aborigines, and in regard to nasal index the Kayasths, who, according to the Braliminical theory, are Sudras, take precedence over the Brahmins, and the Chandalas, an impure caste, go before the Rajavansis of royal blood. The whites are not all paragons of beauty and virtue, and the blacks are not all deformed and vicious. The factors, which race-feeling represents to itself as objective, and from which it derives stimulus, are far from being objective in fact. All talk of difference of race is the result of a prejudice, which has only served as a menace to tolerance, to truth, to justice, to righteousn'ess, to honor and international comity.

All attempts to classify mankind into races have proved a signal failure. At best the so-called races of mjukind, spoken of by anthropolc'isfes and ethnologists, are only hypothetical olassificatiods for convenient desoription, serving just the same purpose as the theories of physical science. They are, to use an expression of Lamark, mere produotes of art, the reaults of mental gymaaaMcs, which have no real counterparts in nature. "Though we flatter," flays Emerson, "the self-love of men and nations by the legends of pure races, all oar experience is of the gradation and resolution ot races and strange resemblanods meet us everywhere. It need not puzzle ns that Malay and Papifan, Gelt and Bomau, Saxon and Tirtar should mix, t>h)in We «se the rudiments of tiger and babbota in oUrhuii»n forin sad kdow that the barriers of races

are not so iirm, but that some spray sprinkles us from antediluvian seas." At the present day the unity of the origin of mankind is universally accepted. Differences in the shape of the skull and in the colour of the skin, hair and eyes, are the result of changes produced by environment, migration and miscegenation. The various stocks of man can be derived from a generalised type vrith primitive characters by differentiation and specialization along different collateral lives in different environments. Man has never differentiated into different species but only into a number of varieties. Varieties can interbreed, while species do not interbreed, or produce offspring which, like mules, are sterile. No classes of human beings are incapable cf freely mixing with one another. The so-called great families of peoples, Aryan, Caucasian, Semitic, and so forth, represent unities or similarities of language, from which no inference can be drawn as to a common racial origin. Many branches cf these socalled families have mingled again and again. All the great peoples of the ancient and modern world are known to have resulted from intermixture. The difference in racial tipe, as seen between the white, the yellow, and the black races, is ascribed by some naturalists to alterations in the balance of the various glands of internal secretion. No race of man now in existence can be said to represent a pure unvarying type. Much more than anatomical and physiologieal considerations, the general similarity cf mental and moral endowments and the oneness of the historical development of man in all climes and countries teach us to regard all humanity as a vast brothorhcod. In spite of diverse ethnic developments the general history of human culture is the same. Man emerging from savagery passes through barbarism to civilization and ultimately reaches the humanitarian stage. In some cases this development may be arrested. But man everywhere possfsses the same innate capacity to learn. All mankind can learn to understand the same language and can adapt itself to cooperation. The mental differences between the (hffcrent races as between the different classes, is a difference, not of natural endowment, but of opportunity. Human nature tieing in essence the same everywhere, progress is a matter not conrrcted with the race to which an individual belongs I but with the system of beliefs with which he is indoctrinated. By acquiring scientific knowledge and adopting scientific methods of education, the Japanese have completely

changed their moatal qualities. Other rases oan change their mental character as quickly as the Japanese, and history proves this abundantly. A tolerance of racial differences can be achieved only by the categorical denial of conformity. Insistence on a dead conformity is an index of barbarism. To be human is enough. Varieties of character enrich civilization.

The purity of blood for which some men stickle is a pure myth. The vj.rna sankara which the orthodox Hindu fears was aooomplisfaed centuries ago. "Tiiera is hardly a class or caste in India," says D. R. Bhandarkar in his paper on Foreign Elemants in the Hindu population, " which has not a foreign strain in it. There is au admixture ot alien blood not only among the warrior classes —the Rajputs and the Mahrattas-but also amongst the Brahmanas, who are under the happy delusion, that they are free from all foreign element." In the veins of the Brahmins of the present day flows tho blood of the Sudras ot antiquity, just as in the veins of the white Europeans runs the blood of the ;: Tegroe3 who lived on the continent of Europe daring the quaternary period. The infusion of new blood into families and peoples has always been productive of very beneficial results. Dr. Tylor says that he saw the most beautiful women in the world in Tristanda Cunha among the descendants of the whites and the blacks. M. Einot says that the most remarkable examples of longevity are found among the Mulattoes. VVhareever crossing has taken place in normal conditions, tha types called inferior have improved without causing any degeneracy in the types called superior. The pessimistic assertions of the detractors of crossing are refuted by the fact that peoples who have freely mixed with one another have continuously progressed. Those who are in the vanguard of civilization and progress are those whose blood is most rich in heterogeneous elements. Even when we consider the case of superior individuals in ^lifferent countries, we are astonished to find that almost all of them are the result of inter-marriages. Havelook Ellis afiBrms that the best American writers and thinkers are descended from mixed families. On the other hand all attempts to preserve the purity of blood have produced disastrous consequences. History demonstrates how those among the aristocracy of Europe, who have kept aloof from the plebian classes, have either degenerated or died out.

It is not uncommon to find people defending caste" from the standpoint of heredity. As Thomas Paine

says, "the idea of hereditary legislators is as inconsistent as that of hereditary judges, or hereditary juries, and as absurd as an hereditary mathematicia,n, or an hereditary wise man, and as ridiculous as an hereditary poetlaureate-" All that science has to tell us regarding heredity, that is, tho individual's contribution to his development, isi summed up in the theory of recapitulation. Just as the human embryo assumes successive forms which represent the physical evolution of the hrman species, though with variations, short-cuts, etc., sp after birth the individual follows in a rough schematic way the lire of mental and social evolution cf the race. What the child brings into the world is a psychological organifm which r(\^r.cfs reflox-y and instinctively to certain stimuli and impuhively and in unccordicated manner to (ther stim.nli, but in no direction is the child eqvdpped with innate truths or standards. Except in a few cases our knov.ledge of heredity is very sl'glt and uncertain. The laws of hei'edity, emi'hasised by Piometriciars and Mendelians are so complex and obscure that wc nia)' rely only in a few extreme cases. They may hold pood, rigidly or approximately, cf cr lour of eyes or hair.rf stature, perhaps even of temperament an'i energy, br.t there is grave doubt whether these laws control the intellectual life. Says Eatescn in his Mendel's Principles of Ih-redity: • There is as yet nothing iii the descont of the Jiigher mental qualities to suggestthat they follow any single system of transmission It is likely that both they and the mere marked developments cf physical powers rosdt rather from the cciiiciderco of inimercus factors than from Iho; ossesbion of any one gei.ftic eh ment." Mental qualities, being the effects rf trairing and snrron.ndings, are picrely acqidred character?. There is no evidence that they are ever inherited. Dn the other hand there is overwhrlming evidence that they are net inherited. The secret of mental resemblance is not inheritance but association. Example, training, development in a similar environment are sufficient to account for .tjap mental likecesp between child E'nd parent. Lcmhroso claims that all these that are respected for mprality or intellect werp diseased and quite unfit to be prpgenitors of the race. This view of Lcmbroso may be false, but it is true that those whp possess great powers themspIvRS dp not trap?mit their excellent qualities. The laws cf heredity are so comulex and so obscure that we have really po spience of eugenics in spite of the great noise about ^t. As Hpxley says, " I (^pubt sv'l^ether even tho kear.ost judge of character, if he had before him a hundred boys and girls under fourteen, oould pick out with the least chance of success, those who should be kept, and those who should be chloroformed, as equally sure to be stupid, idle, or vicious. The 'points' of a good or bad citizen are really far harder to discern than those of a puppy or a short-horn calf." The analogy between the breeding of men and the breeding of dogs or horses is wholly false.

"It needs," saya Whetham, "the conjunction of many different factors to produce a man of ability, a woman of beauty and charm. Hence we can not at present at all events, trace the descent of ability, moral character, or beauty in the same prec'so wny %% wo can follow from generation to generation certain he 111}- ds as"s or mental defects." Geniuses do not arise out cr .my exoinsive hierarchy or caste, but appear as oanriaionsly as the wind whicii bloweth where it listeth, accordint:; to la,ws, if snob there be, wmich have hitherto l;affi' 1 i''' e .go-ists Tho ethical cnitura of an individual depen.ls tni voluiit.iry conscious efr'ort towards an end in view and has thorefore moca to do with education than heredity. The inborn traits of average general development are so mighty tVuit morality can rarely be exnected as a natural factor to ex.nibit greater power than the other lactors. Vvare man left solol_, c' the oo'trc 1 of heredity b" would exhibit much more the character of an animal than or an ethical being. The most irnuurtant social traits, tho,so that co 'cern the moral life of ma slil ..', .i u b. tr:\c;'d, u.ot to a common horelltary constitutio ., '. ;;. c - imou soeiai environment. A mole of 0. n 1;ct, which is widpiy diffn-sd and fepling, th(ni_;Ui;, Stable enough ...l:..-u h-\(^{2}\)gioina typical exerts a powerful and almost irrt!si»t.b!..i i • {! .e ice on the individual. Ivlaa is a product not a .. y of ,,,n,ira bit alio ot cult :re. Imitation stimulatas the iui.,uid05 la; au,d ethical development of the young and enableii them to acquire iu a fa,v years habits which re pre? out long, centuries ot endeavour pa the part of th^ir ancestors. Human natu-re is continually changing apd is perpet lating it? olia.ijjipa by language, arts laws, institutions, thus cre; iiug an, ew environment which is more important than ap.afistral lulieritauice. Bven tho socj,lled national ehJ).racteri^tic- cf the pi?.ople. ot any cotintry are not innate phacacters but in the main exprosaioUfS of dLifera,ic traditions The social and jrbysical environment furnishes tbe whol? opnteut Ql man's rational life- It has bean pointed out that in the East African campaign the untrained, almost wild natives showed in the setting and actual construction of light railways and roads a degree of intelligence, enterprise and foresight which would have shamed most men of the British labouring classes. The same writer says that in commercial enterprises the African natives are as "nearly efficient as their more largely trained Hindu competitors, who have the traditions of long generations of artisan forefathers behind them." Each child is a new beginning and the path to virtue is as open to tha child of the Pariah as to the child of tho Brahmin. Janmana jayate sudra, karmana Jayate dvijah. Every one born of women is a Sudra, but the practical life of the social environment into which one enters renders one twice-born. Evil habits of sordid sur. roundings keep flowing on to posterity by home or environmental contagion.

Though we may not call in question the existence of natural inequalities among human beings, yet we can not but admit their fundamental equality when we consider them as rational beings and moral potentialities. The ideal goal of human progress consists in the development and exercise of those capacities which, from the highest ethical standpoint, should be cultivated and employed. This necessitates the existence of a regime in which the criteria of fitness for success will bo the possession of absolutely the highest moral qualities. It naturally implies that no one shall find himself born into a social world in which one is to any degree so bound by social requirements which render it impossible for him to develop to the fullest his capacities, to refine to the fullest his desires, and to reap to the fullest the rewards of his individual merit. The impossibility of securing all this under the regime of caste, which relegates certain sections of the community as hopelessly inferior to others, is obvious. Caste pride and class exclusiveness have always stood in the way of good government and the growth of liberty; they have been the curse of the world in the past and will prove her ruin in the future. Social reformers might have laid stress upon contentment in men and stability in institutions, bat none of them has desired the establishment of a stereotyped oaste system. "If indeed no effort is made," says John Euskin, " to discover in the course of their early training, for what services the youth of a nation are individually qualified, nor any care taken to place those who have unquestionably proved their fitness for certain functions, in the offices they oould best fulfil-then to call the contused wreck of social order and life brought about by malicious confusion and competition an arrangement of Providence, is one of the most insolent and wicked ways in which it is possible to take the name of God in vain." The organic conception of society demands the responsibility of all to each and each to all. In an organism all the members may not be discharging functions of equal value. Still all are regarded as of equal Value and are given equal opportunity for development for discharging their functions in the best manner. This does not imply absolute equality but equality of opportunity for self development and social service. The rejection of the system of hereditary castes is not based upon an abstract assertion of equality, but upon historical facts and scientific interpretations, which refute the utility of such a system. Nature has endowed some man with greater powers and denied them to others. But no human agency should bo permitted to aggravate the natural disability and clog the path of progress.

Equality of opportunity means that success shall be determined by talent and energy and not by the accident of birth. The abolition of special privilege, the wider and more equal distribution of wealth, the extension of faoilities for education, the increase pf inter-communication-these are some of the means of affording equality of opportunity. Mere laiisez-faire does not constitute opportunity. Equal opportunity has to be created by annulling the tyranny of circumstance and actively intervening against established injustice. One can not be given opportunity without the acknowledgment of one's worth. Honour and dignity can not be regarded as the exclusive prerogatives of a caste, or class, or race. Self-respect resents arrogance and disparagement and demands fraternity, which implies fair-mindedness, courtesy and the admission of one's own limitations. Without fraternity there oan be no fellow-citizenship and fallow-humanity. Fraternal self-respect demands that a man ranks with his fellows, even though he may have achieved glory and distinction. A polity of oaste and privilege oan never be consistent with social equality. Men may be unequal, but they are all men; they may differ in the degree of their capacity, but they possess capacity of the same type. Reason is the common mark and nobility of all men What Shylock says of a Jew, oan be said of any man: "Rath he not eyes? Hath he not hands, organs, dimensions, senses, affections, passions? fed with the same food, hurt with the same weapons, subject to the same diseases, healed by the same means, warmed and cooled by the same Winter and Summer, as his fellow is?" The possession by all men of similar innate capacity for happiness and misery is the basis for the right of every individual to participate in the control of public policy. Without perfect equality of opportunity for all classes alike, there is no possibility of determining the actual merit of any individual. The broad duty of society is so to arrange its institutions that success is to the best according to the highest human ideal. Without a social order based on the principles of a just and equitable organization tha survival of tie fittest according to the highest human ideal is not possible. Only out of equal rights and privileges for all will emerge justice, human dignity human solidarity and unity.

These in power not infrequently thitik that they are necessarii}' more capable of developmant than those whom they regar:! as their inferiors. Such a proposition is unwarranted by the teachings of science. One well established fact of evolution is that in the "higher" form of a species there is a tendency to revert to the typical form. Hence it would seem possible that the descendants of those who are now thought low and base might, if TIME and opportunity WERE adven them, rise to the typical form of the species, and oven go beyond it, while it is not im; rssihle that the siiaco'; .- . ors cf those who are now regarded as representing a higher typo might revert to the tj'pical form of the Si.ificies, and eve;: degenerate to a lower condition. Of this history furnishes ample prnofs. As N'ietzache points CKUT, "tho rough energy of the camp, the deep imperso.uU ha.tred, the cold blocdodiiess of murder with a good conscience, the general ardour of the system in 1,he destruction of the enemy, the proud ir.diff.ercnoe to great losses to ones own existence and that of one's friends, the hollow, earthquake-like convulsion of tha soul, can as forcibly and certainly be communicated to enervated nations " If such differgncosas exist between the present nations of Europe are the result of a dilt'ercnce iu eavironment and individual variability, 'vnd if tha relation lietvyeen the organism snd its environment is the (iltiuaate caupe of bodily and nientaJ vaxiatioa. the poasihiiity of progressive development for every people, even the most backward, must be oopoeded, if only

the physical ami social conditions of environment can suitably be changed. That among the individuals of all races there are great differences of endowment, capacity and attainment no one will deny. But science, religion and practical politics are agreed in denying the existence of naturally superior races and eternally inferior races. As Dean Inge remarks, the European man has no other superiority to the races which he arrogantly despises than being the fiercest of all beasts.of prey equipped with weapons which have made., him the lord and the bully of the planet. It is national pride' that has been the cause of mutual depreciation between peoples. So, long as the most trumpery pin-points of distinction of colour, creed or caste serve as g' onnds of quarrel, we shall net reali. e the blessings of a universal peace on earth. "U'ithoot the pelitical and social equality e f all mankind there will be no substantial human advancement.

The theory of the four vn.ma^ ia regarded by some as an ideal to which srcier.y ought to coniorm. Society is for them nothing huii the individual written large The maoroco-ni of society and the microcosm of the individual must corro.Sf.^ond to each other. Just as the body has a head, arms, thighs, and feet, so rrmst society have something corresp'udin . It must have parts which discharge futic irus similar to those of the h(: u, arms, thighs and feet Prtnofy must therefore, consist rf fo"r classes., devoted respectively to the gl.t fighting, husbaildry, and menial service This is both bad pbysioiopy u" ! '::ud ;f ciolcgy. It is bad pi y siclpcy hocuus,: you can li. t ulvi-lu < l.o be dy into self sub8i=tf nt < rgaus. We work with, cur 'vh<ir- body, whatever bo th*-' kiuil r'f work wti may do. "Il all V'•, k tho whole body, not more parts, is active. It is bad Sfciolcgy because you can not make the classes of a society correspond to parts of the borly Y, u can not have one class which merely or even mainly ;hi;iks, another which, merely works. The great defect of any such concejition is that it obscures the true unity of society. For classes so distinguished are related only by way oi difference, each fulfilling" its nature in contributing snperfici.iIly distinct functions- Diffe.rence cf function is indeed essential within a society,, but beyond the differenca involved in external function there must exist an inward likeness. Society is not simply or primarily th' harmony cf differences, b.t the union af likes.. 'The, likeness is.ultimate. Cousequently justice whipji is,a, principle of pp.rtitiop, which sees that each pat

fulfils ifca function, does not form the deepest ground of social unity. It is only the superficial social relationships, such as the relation of master to servant, employer to employee, buyer to seller, which rest on mere difference, that involve the play of justice. But in a real society the relations of difference that exist imply an identity ot nature in the members so related, a relation of likeness on which the relation of difference is founded. Likeness of nature involves likeness of ends and likeness of goods. Without unity underlying differences there can be no division of labour, for division of labour and cooperation are only two aspects of a single fact. The greater the division ol labour the more interdependent men become. Therefore you can not split up a society into classes corresponding to distinct and exclusive elements, whether of body or mind. The only inherently evil division of labour is in fact such as would reduce men to the place of parts within a machine, but such a consequence would arise only from a division of labour based on a system of castes for various kinds of work.

The Brahmin frees himself from all this criticism by basing his social philosophy on the belief in a mysterious soul and its occult karma and transmigration. For this philosophy the true nature of the individual lies beyond his visible self, and a blind law of justice assigns different duties to individuals according to their birth. All this is flatly opposed to the modern ideal of democracy which demands that men should enjoy equal rights and derive equal benefits from social organization, ft is indeed true that aptitude and competence will be the basis of distribution of the necessary activities of society; that classes may arise resting on personal differences, differences ot occupation, ability, character, manners. The more classes rest on significant personal differences, the farther are they removed from the evils of a caste system, from tha physical repulsion and stagnation it entails. Wealth too is a class-determinant, but being acquirable, alienable, transferable it draws no such permanent lines of cleavage as does birth. When cUsses rest on intrinsic personal differences and not on mere privilege or •status, the interests of the community are best served. But it is an evil to the whole community when some members feel themselves out off from a share in the complete lite or culture of the community. No forms of social service, least -ol all the highest, should be the privilege of any determined

class. All human activity ia also social function. It is inhuman and anti-social to condemn arbitrarily and permanently some men to ignoble and repugnant tasks. If **a** developed society needs base and distasteful tasks to be performed by its members, the only way of doing it is to assign such tasks to all by rotation, so that all members may be assigned equal rank, or to require that every man engaged in mechanical work shall do a portion of bis day's work in intellectual employment and that every brain worker shall devote a portion of his day to physical labour. Only thus shall we attain to a condition in which every man shall have, as George Meredith puts it, "a fall man's share in what is going on in life."

It is the boast of some that the system of castes has been able to ring out the feud between capital and labour. Perhaps it has done so by rendering it possible for the accident of birth to obliterate the natural capacities of the children of the unfortunate Sudra. The position of the Sudra in the caste system, as laid down in the Shastras, is that of a serf, who is beyond the pale of instruction. This serfdom is the logical consequence of the belief in souls and their transmigration. Says Manu: "If any of the four classes omit without urgent necessity the performance of their several duties, they shall migrate into sinful bodies and become slaves to their foes." The caste system has certainly made India a pleasant spot for the Brahmin to live in among a caste-ridden people, but only at the cost of horrible suffering and destitution for the depressed classes. The Brahmin has turned the majority of Hindus into hewers of wood and drawers of water, depressed intellectually and socially. If the inevitable result of the capitalistic system is seen in the slums of the great cities of the modern world, the squalid disease-striken paracheries all over India are the baneful effect of the system of castes. In what way has caste furthered the common weal? Has it brought about a proper distribution of the means of ordinary welfare and comfort? Has it secured for every caste-observing man what is necessary to make life tolerable and give bim the blessings of culture? Has caste impelled individuals to associate their labour for the common welfare of all? Has caste tended towards the collaboration and coopf ration of all classes for the general progress of all? Has caste put an end to competition and the spoliation of others? While it is necessary that the work done should furnish to the worker not only

« wage or salary sufBcienfc to sustain him in the best possible performance of his work, it should also be the means of his intellectual, volitional and aesthetic development But the spirit of caste has invested certain kinds of work with an unnatural odinm. While the social impulse belongs to tbe very fundamental nature of man, oaste has tended to breed repulsion between men and to manufacture, as Rabludranath says, a 'magnificent cige of countless compartments/' This mutual repulsion between castes has made it impossible even for all the workers in a factory to combine for improving their status. No plan of organization which requires the subordination of many can tend to the development of all its members. A cohesion through the assent and devotion of every member of society is necessary for every individual to regard himself as a public functionary working for tha bane (it ot society. The only system that makes possible the ideal ot cohesion compatible with liberty is cooperation, which the spirit of caste tends to destroy. Only through the collaboration ot all classes can the general welfare be assured, which would guarantee to every one that minimum of comfort that would give him a chance to be moral and human. Without the acceptance ot joint responsibility both by the labourer and the capitalist for the efficient conduct ot industry no genuine improvement will occur. This means that labour must have a share in the management of industry, the capitalist must not maintain his emphasis only on profits, and labour its emphasis only on wages and short hours. If labour as a class is ever to rise from the relative misery and poverty of its surroundings, the energy drained away in luxuries and in harmful or unnecessary products must be turned to the production of more of the right kind of stuff-more houses, more food stuffs, more clothing, more schools. Production measured either in money or tons of goods has easily increased, but the production of necessary, well-made, consumable goods, and their distribation among individuals has shown but a slight improvement, and it is only the latter that is of importance to the majority of mankind. Forces on forcea are created, new machinery aontinually devised, new means of communication introduced, but the common w^1 has nOt been furthered. Want Ad misery sire the lot of the majority; they Hve by fmnd, chibanery, or Servile labour. Seven tenths of the wealth of tile world as well as the oontrol of the mentis t(phrodtlotion Kte in the haWds of a few?. Mdn alrft hiitler the

delusion that the spoliation of others and **the** transformatioa **of** themselves into parasites increases their welfare. **The** competitive organization of society fosters the worst elements in human nature and is not favorable to the cultivation **of** the virtues required in the love and service of humanity.

Some see an analchy between the system of caste and the scheme proposed by Plato in his Republic to regenerate mankind. Plato's scheme for the reconstitution of society was due to his distress at the corruption of the higher classes, on whom rested in his opinion the salvation of the State. His method of logical defiaition and classification led him to the conclusion that the collective action of men was possible only through a division ot labour. From this he argued that in the interest of the whole community every individual ought to be restricted to a single occupation. Hence the industrial classes, who form tha bulk of the population, should be excluded from political power as well as military service. Though each profession must be exercised by men trained for it, yet mercenary fighters might employ their power either to oppress and plunder defenceless citizens or to establish a military despotism. Though only men fitted by special training should discharge the functions of government, yet a privileged class might be tempted by the abuse of their position to fill their pockets and gratify their passions. To provide against these dangers and to make them better attend to their duties the rulers and the defenders of the state ought not to possess any property of their own, but should subsist on the labour of the industrial classes. All private interests should be eliminated from their lives. Marriage and domesticity should be abolished, although they might procreate children, who would be the property of the State. Women who produced children for these ruling and military men should have no home employments. They should pass through the same bodily and mental training, be enrolled in tilie army and discharge, when fitted, the highest political " For Plato the oivic ideal is always a united^ funotions. firmly organised group, the members of which live, as far as possible, a common life, educated from the cradle in com men n'arserieB and schools, eating and drinking at common tables, «eroising in coromon, and having, as far as may be common objects of joy and grief oh all occasions of life. The "enemy" ia exeessive individualism, the pursuitof private well-being, exdnnve igoireiF, ejxolasive irealth, exoloaive pteaaures^

•whether such individualism assumes the collective form which pursues the exclusive interest of a specially favoured group, such as an industrial class, a political faction, or an aristocratic club, or assumes the more extreme form which produces the superman or tyrant." To the popular ideal of the unconstitutional despot, Plato opposes his ideal of a philosopher-king. The reason for this is that he regards the life of philosophic contemplation as beyond criticism. But society can not allow its finest intellects to withdraw completely from the pressing problems of the community. Hence men and women with the aptitude and training for the life of philosophic coutemplation must at frequent intervals return to the arena of practical life and undertake the task of political administration, net as an object of keen competition but as a social duty, as a form ol social service. This short account is enough to show how lar Plato's scheme of regeneration ol mankind is Irom the system ol castes. As has already been pointed out, economic division of labour is not the basis of caste. Caste has a mystic and occult foundation. Caste exists even among gods, animals, metres and the seasons. What among men the Brahmin is, that IS Agni among the gods, the ram among beasts, the eight syllabic among metres. All these are of the same nature and have sprung from the head of the creator of the world. Similarly the Kshatriya, the Vaisya, and the Sudra have sprung respectively from the arms, the belly and the feet of the creator, their confreres in other spheres of being having the same origin. On this classification rests also the consecration of a Brahmin youth between the years cf eight and sixteen, since eight is the sacred member of his caste. For the same reason the period for the Kshatriya boy is between eleven and twenty two, and that of the Vaisya one from twelve to twenty four. Fcr a similar reason the Brahmin kindles his sacrificial fire in spring which is the season for his caste, the Kshatriya in summer, and so forth. The ceremony of shaving the beard is to be performed for a Brahmin youth at the age of sixteen, for one of the Kshatriya caste at the age of twenty two, and for one of the Vaisya caste at the age of twenty four. All these prescriptions have a mystic, magical significance, just like the prescriptions for the seclusion of women during their monthly periods.

The attempt to find an economic basis for the system of castes is as chimerical as the attempt to find a hygienic basis

for treating a wonaan in her monthly periods Sm a chandali on the first daj^, a hrahmaghatini on the second, a rajaki (waslmrwomari) on the third, as pure iov the husband after a bath in flo-ving water on the fourth, and for the devas and the pitris on the fifth. Menstruation is akin to beat in female animals, and represents the period during which there is a great desire for union with the other sex. But man in his ignorance has given a magical interpretation to what is natural. As Dr. Brazer says, "the object of secluding women at menstruation is to neutralize the dangerous influences, which are supposed to emanate from them at such times general effect of these rules is to keep tho vonian snsnonded, so to say, betw'een heaven and earth. Being cut off from the earth and the sun, she can poison neither or rhes(3 groat sources of lifo by her deadly contagion, and she may be considered to be out of the way of doing mischief. The precautions thus taken to isolate or insulate the g'.rl are dictated by regard for her own safety as well as for the safety of others. Xn short the girl is viewed as charged wish a powerful force, which, if net kept within bounds, may provu the destruction both of the girl herself and of all with wliom she comes in contact. To repress this force within the limits necessary for the safety of all concei-ned is the object of the taboo in question." Like the practice of secluding woraoa at the menstrual periods, the practice of shaving the heads of widows has a magical origin, .- mong all savage and sei.ni-bavaga races the belief is that the ghosts of the dead hangabuut places and persons to whom they may be attached; they therefore, perform magical rites and ceremonies to drive off the ghosts. Tha ghost cf a dead man is supposed to attach itself to the body of his widow, especially by the hair, as a ghost is supposed to do when it obsesses a woman. Hence the* removal of tho hair from tha»head of a widow has cnme to be regarded as the best means of getting rid of the ghost, in the same way as an Indian magician removes at the last stage a tuft of hair from the head of the obsessed. Suttee also is the result of the belief in a soul. The soul of the dead man was supposed to go with the smoke to the heavenly world. For use in the next life his ornaments, clothing, weapons, and widows were burnt with his body. Widows were therefore forcibly, sometimes stupefied with intoxicants, burnt alive with the dead bodies of their husbands. As an apology for this abomination it was declared at a later stage

that "a wife could not bear to survive her husband, but would be prompted by her own faithful, loving, beautiful nature to offer up her life on the pyre which consumed his dead body". We must therefore look for the origins of caste in magic and metaphysics rather than in "an established system of responsible mutual service through division of labour." In a well-organised society all are alike the servants of the same common ideal.

It is a shameless lie to say that at the pinnacle of the caste hierarchy was placed a beggar who renounced and sacrificed things material for things spiritual, when Manu openly declares that the Brahmin is '• by right the chief of this whole creation," and that he is entitled to all that exists in the universe by his primogeniture and eminence of birth. The Brahmin was respected, not because "he did not care for wealth, and overcame the fascinations and the temptations of money, and was content to pursue intellectual pursuits and also to devote himself to the spirit and the mind", but because of his birth. The rishis, spoken of in the Vedas, were not poor, and if the statements in the Buddhist books may be trusted, many Brahmins at the time of the Buddha must have been wealthy. It is evident from Manu that Brahmins were following different vocations, for he asseverates that, " although Brahmanas employ themselves in all sorts of mean occupation, they must invariably be honoured, for they are something transcendently divine." The Brahmin taught the non-Brahmin the nothingness and the sordidness of the worldly life, and asked him to concern himself with the world of reality, and to resign everything to tha " All ". Brahmam is the all. Who has a better right to say a^aw 6r(i/(»»a. osmi than the Brahmin, the representative of the gods on earth, nay, the very god of this earth? Hence everything-property, power, rank, precedence-must be resigned to him. Indeed the Brahmin is a beggar. There are but three ways of living: by working, by begging, or by thieving Those who do not work, disguise it in whatever fine language, are doing one of the other two. Among the latter must be included the loafers; those who live idly on inherited money; those who live on the surplus work of their fellows; and those who pretendto do brain-work, while they do nothing but repeat hack phrases and glibly utter unintelligible gibberish. The dense ignorance and superstition of the masses of the Hindu society have furnished an opportunity for the breeding of a class of parasites, who have thriven on the lifeblood of their victims. It is, however, a consolation that the parasitic habit leads in course of time to the destruction of tha parasite itself. Every society needs an organization of some sort. But this organization must be hised on solidarity, arising from a sense of community and voluntary co-operation Solidarity implies that each feels answerable for all and all for each. Solidarity in this sense can grow only in an atmosphere of individual freedom. CiviUzation implies a continually growing freedom and independence of tha individual Every one born must have the same right to live and choose his lot. In so far as one does not encroach on another's liberty, every occupation must be open to oue. The grade of one's activity should ba determined, not by birth, privilege, power, or volubility, but by his own intellect and will. But this ia impossible in a society, iu which birth is everything and culture nothing. Culture implies the abolition ot classes and castes; the qualihties considered superior will not be those immobilized in a special class or caste and protected by special privileges. The standard of one's worth will ba his capacity to love.

Caste system is the mainstay of the Hindu religion; it constitutes the common feature of all that passes as Hinduism. " Varoasrama", says Mahatma Ghandhi, " is inherent in human nature, and Hinduism has reduced it to a science. It does attach by birth. A man can not change his Varna by choice." Hinduism is mora a religion of usages (ac/iamj than of beliefs; it is a religion of a year-long burden of ceremonies. It is a religion for the most part of fear and multitudiaoas scruples about lawful and unlawful food, inter-dining and intor-marriage. We are told that in the Kali age all other rules, such as those of bathing, prayer (sanlhi/a), tarpana, have almost disappeared, and tho distinction of lawrul and unlawful food constitutes the characteristic of the Hindu and distinguishes him from a Mleocha. Revelling iu a mythology defying all dasoripbion and abounding in divinities bayoad number, Hinduism reduces in ultimate analysis to the singla social fact, the supremacy of the Brahmin. The Brahmin is sacrosanct by birth and eating "pure food". ba the birth ha is qualified to depository of truths, otherwise inacoassible to reason. He mav follow almast all tha professions. Ha may ba an ascetic, a philosopher, a teacher, a writer, a poat, an astrologer, a physician, a baggar, a hasbandman, aa usurer, an o£5aial,^a oook.

a merchant, Yet under all these protean transformations he retains the unique character of bein? "apod on earth," a deity higher than kings, who must be addresseu alwjiys lord (sivanii, thalu?-; The attitude of the Brahmin has been to tolerate the greatest diveisity of thought, but to discourage those heresies which lead to the systematic neglect of ancient Brahminical Sacraments, or to the disturbance of the position of the Brahmin ir the social order. This is the point to which converge all reliyions, called Hindu, however much they may differ in other respects. Hinduism consists par excellence in the superstitions reverence for the Brahmin and the cow. The Brahmin and the cow (jrobrahviana) constitute in the practical life of the liirdu an inseparable couple. The slaughter cf a Brahmin, cr a c(Vv, is a sin that can not be expiated; worship of a Brahmin, or a cow, posesses unsurpassable merit

The system of castes is part and parcel of the Hindu conception' of the universe. Speculative activity finds its ultimate expression in the art of social existence. As John Stuart Mill has pointed cut, "speculative philosophy, which to the superficial appears a thing so remote from the business ci life and the outward interest of men. is in reality the thing on earth, which most influences them, and in the.long run overbears every other influence, save these v?liich it must itself obey." By informing the judgment by their truth or warping it by their falsity, speculative opinions consciously, or unconciciisly, rule the lives ot men. Superstitions, animatingtbe sphere of belief, lead to false principles in the sphere of conduct. Obsessions, swaying the mind, le,id it to act out its preceficeptions. Like the Muslim and the Christian the Hindu shares with the primitive man the animistic belief in a soul, which has been the soi; rce of many a sufi'ering of mankind. The Muslim and the Christian regard each sonl as suddenly emerging into existence from nothing, pursuing for a few years its deriiny on earth, und tailing into oblivion in an apotheosis in heaverf, or a damnation in hell. 'To the Hindu this view appears cruel and unjust. For him the present lite is simply a passing phase in an infinite evolution. Mahatma Gandhi tells us that " prohibition against inter-marriage and inter dining is essential for a rapid evolution of the soul." The <aw of causality, which appears so necessary in the physical vorld, appear B to the Hindu still more necessary in the moral world. EacTi individual scul is net the result ot mere chance, Cr the caprice of a divine power, but the resultant of an unfathomable past. Bach individual soul oajoys in this Ufa tha fruit of its own deeds in previous lives. "Those who lead a good life •', says the Chaadogya Cpauiahad, "may look forward to being honorably born of a Brahmin mother a Kshatriya, or a Vaisya; while those who have led a vile life may expect to enter the womb of a bitch, or a sow, or a Chandali." The Brahmin gathers here the fruit of his accumulated merits, while the Chandala expiates his transgressions, though not remembered yet not extinguished, in virtue of a law superior to the immediate exigencies of human reason, a law of retribution infallibly producing its effect somewhere and somewhen not falliag within-the narrow purview of human vision. This is the Hiadu doctrine of Karma, or the transmigration of soul, to which Lhuro is no pj,rj.lloi olsewliere This fch-jory has no relation to the scientiflo th'nry o(ovolutirn The biological evolution of mind from the rudimentary psychic life of the primitive cell to the fullnoss oi humanity is entirely foreign to the thought of Che Hi uhi The |->ass,tge ot Mti soul through different embodiments in dlitferent existences may be a method of purifying itself to refcar i to the Absolute, but this passage is different from what acienca viewsaa ovolation. Tha goal of the doctrine of Karaia is the recovery by tha soul of its lost estate, bat to science man is the iar off event reached by a ceaseless evolitioa, sinc.^ life made its first appoarance in some early pelagian sea.

The Hindu doctrine of Karma is an adaptation ot the primitive belief in reincarnations. Almost all primitive peoples have regarded conception as the rolncaruatiu: $u[.i \ u.iiaa]$ for animal soal. .According to the Brahminin com-ent-ois th . soul migrates from man to oue or other cf tae so called Sda/gatis, just as a man migrates from one hoasa to aaotaer, cr p .ts off one coat and dons another according to necessity I(j is claimed for this theory that it ;icGOuats for the phymental, and moral inequalities among men, and enables justice to operate in cases where it has been violated by man, or has fail«d to oneratf* in the present life. Karma is supposed to he a natura natiirans, which is capable of rewarding merit and inflicting puaishment for wrong. 'Py Karma or the merit ot deeds," says Krishna in the Bhagdvata Purana, " are living creatures bora, by Karma again they enter into dissolution. Pie isur j. pain, fear, bliss, all proceed from'^^nm. If there be a God, the distributor of thelruits of others' actions, he too bestows them on

There Is no such thing as the lord of one that works not. A person receives and gives up various bodies by the instritmentality of Karma, which is itself our filend, cnrfoe, our stranger, our preceptor, our God." This retributive theory Buppoees that one is punished, because one has sinned in the sight of a power that inflicts punishment. On the other hand, a sane ethics calls that vicious with which the laws of nature connect pain, and thus the viciousness attaches because of the consequential pain rather than the reverse. . If occassionally tbe suffering falls on the evil doer, there is no reason for peeking an explanation in some mysterious nemesis, which is never so successful as any hnman penal saddling system in pimishment on offenders. When the victim is unconscious of bis fault, the infliction of punishment can have no moral or disciplinary value. According to modern penology punishment is not avenging wrongdoing, but a means for bettering the wrong-doer and society. Even if we regard rebirths as probationary, there being no conscious personal identity running through the series of lives, there could be no meaning in speaking of any experience as being carried from one existence to another. If the memory of previous lives be supposed to lie in •the subliminal realm, fhere being no intellifrence or moral discrimination, in the subconscious, bow could there be any menial or mortd progress? If !**er all tle brp] T life of mankiiul is the greatest peed, ro distribi'tion either of rewards or punisbroents is justifiable, except as it helps to realise that gccd. Whether Weerter] bih^' ' Vp"!- -^ff the principles of humar conduct, cr FiK**^-ply nnr ii** of light sod justice, which have the

tbe cm ncn cci K'! r' n r.Lkiid, the infliction of suffering in Bny rpsp cpr br 'i'h*. frW vhen such infliction produces an overbalance rfpfcd, irrespective of tbe innccence cr gi:ilt of oftbej'erscn upon whrm it is made. Hence tbe dcctrine of Karn^R. according to which a man is punished for what is past and irrevocable and fcr the consideration cf that ohly, must be regarded es ere cf the crudest conceptions of barbarism. If in one life cue has failed to see what is good, what is the guarartee tbst rre would do the same in many?

Tl e doctrine of Karma does not separate the human kingdom frcro the animal kingdom, and estimate rightly the worth ofhuDac perpenality and the value cfi individual merit. By ipreriner the limits imposed by naturl and reason, it assumes that the distinction between the Brabmin and the Pariah is as

legitimate and natural as the distinction between man and beast. Nothing can be more fatal to the equal rights of all ra. tional beings than the vague pantheistic connections that are set up by soul theories. It is with a view to explain existing evils that the doctrine of Karma puts an indelible stain on certain **men** k supports the authority of caste. If pessimism atrophies the instinct of revolt in the heart of man, the fatalism, which is the result of the doctrine of transmigration, extirpates from the mind the idea that existing social conditions may be unjust. By perverting the idea of immortality, the doctrine of metempsychosis perverts at the same tince the ideas of merit and demerit, ot penalty and recompense, of physical fatalityand moral order. Physical evil is considered not only as the necessary consequence, but also as the infallible criterion of moral evil, and the two ideas, not being clearly distinguished, are confounded with each other. The proposition that every demerit entails an affliction passes into the proposition that every affliction involves necessarily a demerit, a sin, and is necessarily a penalty, an expiation. It follows, therefore, that every evil, every suffering, is merited by the person who suffers, though he may not know how or why. When once this monstrosity of an expiation, unaccompanied by the knowledge and memory of the demerit expiated, is regarded as legitimate, the conscience becomes the accomplice of all natutal and social injustices; it accuses none, it protests against none, it revolts against nothing. The heart becomes hardened against the poor, the wretched, and the outcast. Thus has the doctrine of Karma consecrated and eternalised the inequality of conditions, the division of society into castes. Nay more; the deep-rooted prejudices relating to soul and Karma, by raising and preserving barriers against social intercourse between men, tend to create castes. No wonder, therefore, that tho religious sects which accepted the doctrine of metempsychosis, although they started with a protest against caste, ultimately succumbed to caste regime. No wonde'r that those phases of Buddhism, which accomodated themselves to transmigration, could not remove the social evils of India, though they openly revolted against the supercilious claims of the Brahmins.

The doctrine of transmigration of souls stands or falls with the belief in **a** soul. The belief in souls has originated thus. To struggle for self-preservation is the instinctive impulse of every living being.

This impulse has created in the rational living being, man, a desire for salvation from death. The attainment of this desire is everywhere the problem of religion. In his attempts to find a changeless, deathless life, man has through ignorancejallen a viotim to the creations of his own fancy. The horror of death, which is universal among mankind, has, owing to the mystery involved in the decomposition of the dead body and the cessation of relations between the dead person and the survivors, givei; rise to the obstinate disbelief in the necessity of death, in spite of the invariably disastrous experience of failure man has incessantly attempted to escape the inevitable doom of death. To satisfy his longing for a deathless life, man has invented immortal souls, which cordd survive the death of the body. JDream life has led man to regard the dead as really not dead. A little subtle man, or animal, called soul, spirit, crphof-t (atman, pidgala, satkaya, suk:>lima sarira) is supposed to dwell inside a man, or an animal, that lives or movus, aud to be the active agent in all bodily' and mental activities. This soul is supposed to enter the body at conception and quit it permanently at death. It is supposed that one's soul enjoys the fruits of one's actions either by rewards in heaven, Or by jiiun'sbrnents in hell, or by transmigration into other bodies. Jn.dgino;, in the light ot what be fancies about his own nature the unknown on which he finds biniself hopelessly dependent for the realization of his desires, ma. has located a soul like bis own in every object, almost in every circumstance, which impressed-him with a sense of power, Tbe mental condition of the animist or believer in soul is best illustrated by the primitive man, wdio adoios, as a supernatural being endowed witii will the meteoric stom ;ha'. h.as fallen rushing I'rom the sky, or by the negro, who thinks a discharging gun to be a living creature Just as a highly imaginative child symbolizes its fears and peoples darkness with terrifying monsters, so does the man of childish mo'itah'ty conceive gods and demons. Thus has man peopled the n.aiverse with gods and demons, souls like his own but more mighty and capabletif doing good or harm. To win their favour and avert their wrath, man has invented prayers, charms magical formulas, and bloody sacrifices

The belief in a soul has no basis in modern science. It is the result of a process of abstraction, which the Ir.iDi.-in mind employs in all stages of its development. This oner^ition consists in suppressing, or eliminating, certain aspects of the

phenomena under consideration. Tn the consideration of the complex phenomena constituting a living being, all the physico-chemical phenomena are eliminated, and it is assumed that after the elimination soihething remains behind. supposititious mysterious residuum assumes a preponderating importance, and is spoken of as the soul. Since in experience there is a residuum ol unexplained lacts, it might ba difficult to disprove the assumption of a soul, independent of the body, but it is not a scientific hypothesis. It is an outbirth of that sort of reasoning whose guiding principle is: Whatever you are ignorant of is the explanation of what you know. For the animist the body of a living being is merely a statue animated by the soul. With the progress ot science animism has rr'•• >/itt-d to the bnckground Chemical syuthesis has produced in the laboratory substances, which were once regarded as thu special products - of animal or plant activity. Experiment has shewn that tissues and even complex organs can under snitahh- conditions continue to live separate from the body The phenomena, peculiar to living beings, are due to a physico chemical state, called the colloidal state. Now this state is n't confined wholly to living substance. Many inorganic substanoc's, including some metals, exist in the colloidal form, and in this form they exhibit properties very different from those they possess in other states, but very similar to ihose rf living substance. The colloidal state is a dynamical state (d uiarter and possesses energy, which may be regarded as the probable primary source of energy, a jpearing in vital p'u-n. ;ntma. in their simplest term living beings are small on-tordasmic masses, surrounded by an aqueous liquid, in which tut suspended other colloids These small protoplasmic n,a-ses are called ulastids, or cellules. Some of them have envelopes of inert substances, which are the products of their owii activity. In cellules devoid of inert covering there is a cc. tmuity of aqueous substance between the living protoplasm and surrounding liquid. Owing to the continuity of the aqueons medium interactions of a colloidal nature continue isiv take place between the protoplasm and the medium. Wo can say that the cellule, that is, the conrtinuous prnt nlisn.-c mass, is formed from colloidal particles, just as the coileiJrd; articles therasolves are formed from the molecules in tha solveut. In the case of cellules possessing a membranous enved...^e the aqueous continuity between the protoplasm and the medium is brought about through osmosis.

This aqueous continuity is one of the essential conditions of life. In the case of higher animals which live in air, or in water, the body is covered with an impermeable skin, and the exchanges with the medium are confined to particular parts of the organism (intestines, lungs, sensorial surfaces). But in the internal medium confined within the sack formed hy the skin, the cellules constituting the animal are in aqueous continuity with the colloids which constitute this medium. No living organism oan exist without reactions of equilibrium between the different cellules constituting the organism and the medium, by which the cellules are surrounded. Living beings are transformers of energy, and if all phenomena are due to dyssymetries of energy, there is no reason why those observed in living substance should be excluded.

Life depends upon a supply of food, moisture, and air. Life is a state of the living organism, and can not exist apart from the organism, of which it happens to be the state When tbe body of the organism does not exhibit the characteristics of the state, called life, it is said to be dead, or inanimate. In the living body, all the movements are co-ordinated and haromnious; there is continuous adjustment between internal and external conditions, and the various organs of the body exist as parts of a whole. On the other hand in the dead body such movements do not exist; there is no correlation between the various parts of the body; individuality ceases and the parts of the body succumb to the action ot external forces. How life originated is not yet known. We have reasons to think that life originated in the primitive oceans when the temperature of their water fell to 45" C. The semination of our globe by means of germs from other celestial bodies is a puerile hypothesis, merely pushing back the problem of the origin of life to mysterious other worlds. The spontaneous generation of a substance, resembling a chemical compound incessantly undergoing destruction, reconstruction, and growth, forming "the physical basis of life", is a more rational hypothesis, though not verified by facts. The study of living bodies has shown that the source of life is in reality an aggregation of three classes of chemical compounds, resembling resnectively the white of the egg, fat and sugar. The molecules of the compounds of the first class are formed by the combination of more than a thousand atoms of carbon, hydrogen, nitrogen, oxygen, and sulphur. These are very unstable compounds and undergo decomposition on the feeblest shock, but the pro-

ducts of decomposition are capable of reproducing the original' compounds in contact with similar external compounds. AU the chemical phenomena of life consist in this destruction and reconstruction of compounds. All phenomena observed in a living being obey the same laws as those outside of it. The possession of the faculties of response by some forms of lifeless matter seems to bridge the gap between the lifeless and the living. These faculties connote the influence of habit and the exisfence of unconscious recollection. The complex of activities constituting life demands no peculiar type of influence, wholly confined to vital phenomena and absent from all others. Life is nothing more than a combination, made possible by the extreme complexity ol protoplasm, of processes each of which taken alone falls within a simpler category, which preceded life in the evolution of the universe. Between inorganic matter and the simplest speck of living protoplasm the gap is being constantly narrowed, and there is only an apparent, not a real, break of continuity. From the protoplasm which can not be said to be either animal, or vegetable, life is seen to be an unbroken chain of gradual ascent. Can we say at what point of this ascent came into existence a soul, distinct from the body and capable of persisting after the dissolution of the physical organism?

While one principle, called the soul, satisfies theanimists, the vitalists suppose the existence of two: a thinking soul (atman) and a second principle which maintains the vital functions Tprawa). As more and more of these functions are explained by physics and chemistry, the role of the vital principle diminishes. Instead of being the producer of phenomena, it becomes a directing principle, and is attenuated still further to a directing idea Whether this mysterious something, which is supposed to lurk in vital phenomena, be the double of the savage, the soul of the animist, the vital principle of the vitalist, or the the directing principle of some physiologists, it is the product of the same orientation of mind, which consists of two elements, namely: the belief that, when we have eliminated from vital phenomena all observable characteristics, there remains something behind; and the idea that the consciousness of volition corresponds to a reality, which can be explained by an immaterial principle'. Neither the endeavours of the innumerable spiritualistic bodies, nor the researches of the Psychical Research Society, have furnished any proof of disembodied souls, or spirits. Owing to

the service which the belief in spirits has rendered to mankind as an incentive to overcome the fear of death in battle, as a Solace in bereavement, as a stimulant to virtuous life and noble effort, people try to convince themselves of their existence by perverse argument and concocted evidence. What ia pleasant and beneficial may be "pragmatically " serviceable, but is not necessarily true. A fundamental a priori improbability shrouds all stories relating to spirits. As Edward Clodd puts it, " not on fact, but on sentiment; not on reason but on emotion, do these delusions build their unstable foundations. Impelled by the wish to believe the dupes attend seances by mediums, who like the spirits they pretend to represent, 'love darkness rather than light, because their deeds are evil'. The bias-ruled attitude oi the inquirers is wholly uncritical, the power of suggestion paralyses them, they are prepared to see and hear and believe all that they are told, and the unsatiate appetite for the marvellous is satisfied to repletion. All this is emphasised when the sorrowing, and the bereaved seek consolation from those, to whom they pay their fees to obtain it "

People come by their beliefs in different ways. Some merely take urnbraae in the calm satisfaction of a faith that their belief is the right one and look with pity, contempt, or even horror ou all other beliefs. • These are like the bird that is said to bury its head in the sand as danger approaches and feel satisfied that there is no danger. More often imposed authority forms the expeditions means of producing a general belief. liut this mettiod, though lightly tolerated by cho many, is not acceptable to the thoughtful few, who oasil}'- penetrate the mist of dogma, and, deteccing the pretentiousness of all infallibility, look elsewhere for obtaining a sounder belief. Even when freed from the fetters of authority, men frequently fall victims to their hopes and wishes, and accept views which seem plausible, agreeable, or elevating. Man, it is asserted, is not a mere logical machine, and a place must be conceded to the emotions, the desires, and the will in the determination of belief. If the intellect is quable to afSrm or deny definitely, why should not our emotions and desires be permitted to throw themselves in the scale and induce in us 'a will to believe"? It is true that the will and the heart control the beliefs and actions of men. To convince is easy when tbe will to be persuaded is present. It is crenerally much more efficacious to incite desire than to demonstrate truth.

Bub a scheme of things satisfying to the heart and the will is more subjective and personal than objectivo and universal. Unfortunately with the heart and the will man has believed every possible vagary from Rishabha to Gandhi. What ia the touchstone with which one may test the creations of desire, the outcome or mere aspiration? From the willingness to believe no progress can result. Only when one scrutinizes one a inclinations and wishes, and cares more for tha validity of one's reasoning than for its agreeabler.ess, would it be possible to find the truth. To set store by what is called intuition is to attach significance to all kinds of arrant nonsense and allow words to govern thoughts. As no body can define what intuition is, every body thinks he has it. If kno vledue is given in what is spontaneous, every prattling babe is a wise master, dome may consiler it a sort Or spiritual heroism to believe whiit is unreasonable. Credo quia ahsurdum. He who questions the validity of reason by means of reasoning deserts his own position. As W. K. Clifford puts it. " belief is desecrated when given to unproved and unquestioned statements tor the solace and private pleasure of the believer. . . . Who so would deserve well of his fellows ia this matter will guard the purity of bis belief with a fanaticism c' jealous care, lest at any time it should rest on any unworthy object, and'catch a st.iin which can be never wiped away ... If beliuf has been accepted on insufficient evidence, the pleas: re is a aloien one. . . . It is simple because it is stolen in tiefiance of cur d.'ty to mankind. That duty is to guard o.-.rseivos from such btdiefs as from a pestilence which may shortly master our own b.dy and then spread to the rest of the town. . . . it is wro.ig always, everywhere, and for everyone, to believe auvthing upon insufficient evidence." The belie; in a i^oul audits immortality has devitalised many men and women, and led them to live an anti-social existence without the enrichmoat of life.

The hypothesis of a soul may give comfort and satisfaction to some minds, but it renders no service in a scientific psychology. As Prof. James says, "it is not tor idle or fantastical reasons that the notion of the substantial soul so freely used by common men and the more popular philosophies, has fallen upon such evil days and has no prestige in the eyes of critical thinkers. It only shares the fate of unrepresentable substances and principles. They are all without exception so barren that to sincere inquirers they appear as little more

than names masquerading. You see no deeper into the fact that a hundred sensations get compounded together by thinking that the soul does the compounding than you see into a man's living eighty years by thinking him an octogenarian, or into our having five fingers by calling up pentadactyls. Souls have worn out both themselves and their welcome, that is the plain truth." Normal psychology proves that consciousness can have no existence independent of the organism. Consciousness is known to us only as a phenomenon of lite, connected with an organism possessing a nervous system. Consciousness exists for life and not life for consciousness. For, while organic proc6Sses continue, consciousness may be lacking, as in perfect dreamless sleep, or in the ansesthetised body, or in a lesion to the brain. Organic processes continue as long as there is life, but consciousness is intermittent and its intermittent character is a premonition of its death. The progress of psychology during the last fifty years has been great, but it has produced nothing to strengthen the popular belief in extra-corporeal spirit agencies. On the other hand, it has made intelligible, conformably to the rest of our knowledge, all such phenomena as have been the props of the ignorant belief in spirits.

Personality is a compound of body and mind, a complex of sensations, ideas, &o. The individualised self is a certain grouping of the elements of experience with the body as its centre, centre of vision, centre of action, centre ot interest. Everything circles round the body, and is felt from its point of view. Amidst all changes in consciousness, there is one group comparatively fixed. Our own body is both constant as a grbup and as a constant item in every field of groups. As Prof. Ward puts it, the body becomes in fact the earliest form of self and serves as tha first datum of our later conceptions of permanence and individuality. The unity of what is called personality or individuality consists in tha peculiar way in which one's experiences hang together from moment to moment, The conscious rational unity of the " I " is tha subjective expression of the physical unity of the whole organism, and does not represent an eternal, transcendental, numerical unity. The word"!" denotes a location, with which are primarily associated certain activities and affectional states. Though the word "I" remains the same, yet its significance continually changes. The sameness is constituted by continuity. The mutual relatiotiship between the varying content of consciousness is determined wholly by that continuity, whiob is really the work of memory. Every new content of consciousness appears as an object to the personality representing the totality of past experience, which is spoken of as the cognising subject. When memory is diseased, an alteration of personality takes place. Nevertheless, the continuity of the body makes people regard the altered personality as the same individual. The unity of consciousness implies that I am, but does not state that I am' a soul, which is eternal, immutable, and permanent. A disembodied personality is, like a square circle, or a barren woman's child, a contradiction in terms.

Though there is no soul, yet death does not end all. Just as the history of each individual does not commence with his birth, so it does not end with his death. The continuity of evolution from the electron to man is now an almost universally admitted fact. Organic evolution, or the transformation of living beings, both plants and animal, has been established as a scientific fact. Plants and animals are the temporary individualizations oi: the same life. One germinal substance gathers materials from the outside and develops into the several plants and animals. The individual is only the of a germ-plasm, having transient off-shoot broken continuity from generation to generation, from age to age. Old individuals originate new individuals, and the old materials are dispersed. In the course of •development different species of living beings arise acd grow mere and more unlike one another. They endure for a longer, or shorter, time, and at death suffer dissolution. For science death is destruction, the disappearance of a mechanism, which has only a finite duration. Nature uses up individual lives, just as a fire burns up fuel. "Death is nature's expert contrivance to get plenty of life." Continuity in change is the law of life. Individual death is the penalty that man pays for his high degree of individuation. It is the lives that die but not lite. The nature of each man may often be traced through a long series of ancestors and collaterals. This nature passes on through heredity to new bodies. No human being can completely sever himself from other human beings. Man can have neither being not worth in isolation. Human beings form constituent units of society, not only by reason of the inter-dependence of their diverse physical functions, but by reason of their mental inter-dependence. That one is oonsoious of oneself as a self implies that one can not discriminate oneself escopt in rehfcion to others. One can not even think oneself as being except as a member of a reciprocal society. Man Can not isolate bis mental *IUo* from that ot his fellow-ruca. He is ever subject to the intiaence of the community, of which he is a member. He can sever his connection with one circle of men only by joining another. It is indeed exclusively through expohical inter-dependence that hnman existence as such has en possible. It is through, the mutual dependence of their minds upon one another that men are civilized social, and ethical beings. Each man seems to himself to exist in space, becausfe he measures all distances and directions from his own body. Bat the corporeal independence of indivi I nals does not establish their psychical separateness. On the other hand, language, art, religion, morftlitj', science prove the psychical inter-dependence of men.

Every man is a component of the general icommunity of human beings. The collective influence is there, and in an immaterial but real way controls the destiny of every man, and every man also contributes hi.s share, however small, to the collective influences, which sway for irood or avil the future of mankind. Every man leaves behind him whatever changes he has produced in his surroundings. Even the infant that dies soon after its birth,- leaves an impression' on its mother. The.se inflaences depend on the one h.mii on the character of the person that has produced the.n: on the other hand, their effects and their duration are liptennined by the persons on whom the infliences are exerted The duration of these i :fl leuces may be long or shore, b.ic they are always present, however much they may become weakened in time. Since men are physically independent of one au-other, it does not follow that they are also psychically separate from one another. Separateness is due to the overwhelming preponderance of sensory experience, undue attention to individual physical needs, physical sensations, and the centripetal reflexes going from them. But the life of the individual has no meaning apart from the collective life That which is truly human in each one of us. the true, the beautiful, the good, has something of the universal. Being created and realised only through the communion of minds, it generally breaks through the shackles of individuality, engrafts itself in others and pursues an over-individual lite, it is the overcoming of the restrictions of separate individual existence that contributes

to the joy of the artist, the sooial reformer, and all others who oo-operate iu the welfare of the many and live in the whole. The human race is a vast society, knit together so closely, that, when one part suffers seriously, the other parts also suffer, and when a man errs, the ruin, degradation, and suffering, which his error entails, spread like a miasma round him. What is true of the individual is true of nations. A nation may do everything for itself, not caring for the rest of the world, and bear the consequences of its own limitations.

The negation of the soul naturally leads to the denial of an all-creating d&iis cMra mundum, who is simply a replica of the human soul, although endowed with infinite and eternal self conciousness and will. Man simply sees himself, his form his reason, the best that he has and knows, projected on to the clouds. Theism is a personification of the human mind. " An honest god is the noblest work of man." Neither the method of empiric science, which relies on sensible fact, nor the method of exact science, which relies on mathematical or quasi-mathematical concepts, can justify the belief in God. All arguments for God are the results of the combined suggestions of certain facts, and the moment they affect apodeiotio certitude they become unreal. The so-called experiences ot the mystics can as little establish the reality of God, as the experiences of those who have drunk themselves into delirium tremens, can establish the reality of pinkrats. The experiences of the mystics are subjective in character, a feature which inevitably vitiates them. No one can feel sure, not even the mystic himself, that the transcendental or supernatural element in the mystic's experience is not mere subjective illusion. Nor can the mystic demand from others an absolute and unwavering faith in his ecstatic intuition. At best the Hindu yogi, or the Mohammedan fakir, or the Trappist monk, oan speak for himself only. The psychology of rehgious experience proves beyond doubt that the experience varies with the character of the intellectual th-JDry connected with it. A suspicion naturally attaches to a form of experience (sakshatkara, samyagdarsana) which can equally establish every view of the supernatural. This inconsistent character of • the mystic's knowledge refutes of itself the mystic's claims to immediate insight. The mystic revels inmetapbor, and like the poet gives to airy nothing a_local habitation and a name. Ecstatic intuition cam not establish the truth of a belief, and

the placing of intuition above reason would be nothing more than the enshrining and idolizing ot unadulterated fatuity.

Pacts do not indicate the presence ot a purpose in the universe." To consider the world", as Cardinal Newman says, "in its length and breadth, its various history, the many races of man, their starts, their fortunes, their mutual alienation, their conflicts, and then their ways, their habits, governments, forms of worship; their enterprises, their aimless courses, their random achievements and acquirements, the impotent conclusion of long-standing facts, the tokens so faint and broken of a superintending design, blind evolution ot what turn out to be great powers or troths, the progress of things, as if from unreasoning elements, not towards final causes, the greatness and littleness of man, his far-reaching aims, his short duration, the curtain hung over his futurity, the disappointments, the defeat of good, the success of evil, physical pain, mental anguish, the prevalence and intensity of sin, the pervading idolatries, the dreary hopeless irreligion -all this is a vision to dizzy and appal, and inflicts upon the mind a sense of profound mystery, which is absolutely beyond human solution." Pacts contradict the notion of order in history and the guidance of man's course by "Divine Pro-There is no similarity between the assumption of vidence." Providence and a scientific hypothesis. The end of science has been described as the explanation of the world, the revelation of the real, the unveiling of the causes of nature's processes No such end is suggested by the actual methods of science. Science is interested only in experience. At the outset experience is but an indefinite multiplicity or a confused mass. The mass of facts is so abundant that no mind can completely grasp and no ;memory completely retain. Science therefore seeks to colligate these experiences with the object of enabling us to know as much as possible and to communicate our knowledge. To achieve this end it endeavours to find a 'principle' or 'law' that will bind all facts hari^niously together. Hence science can advance only by trying hypothesis alter hypothesis, until it reaches one that comprehends all the facta. This has always been the method ot science. The practical end of science is served equally well.whether its hypotheses correspond to reality or not. It is not necessary that a scientific hypothesis be true or even probable; the one thing required of it is to reconcile calculation and observation. It imy involve unintelUgible elements, self-contradictions, phantoms of the imagination, but all this is a matter of indifference, if calculation and observation tally, as, for example, the hypothesis of relativity of Einstein. The man of science feels no pang in dropping his hypothesis; for him the facts of experience are everything. Once he found no prospect of attaining his end without postulating the existence of an aether, an all-pervading medium, which can behave both like a very elastic solid and an extremely tenuous gas, but Einstein finds no use for this subtle substance. To say that anything was effected by God is not a scienlific hypothesis. A scientific hypothesis gives us a classification of laws, and points to new experimental methods, thereby enabling us to include a multitude ol facts and details in a simple mathematical expression. Does the postulation of God or Providence do anything similar? On the other hand, it only indicates our innate 'dislike to a confession of ignorance. A scientific hypothesis has not the kind of validity that belongs to a scientific law; the latter does not run the risk of being replaced by another law. A scientific law is not a reality in itself, but a formula invented by the human mind as a substitute lor things to render them comprehensible, to represent them in accordance with the laws of thought. A scientific law does not claim any validity other than empirical verifiability. All verification consists in comparing forecasts with experience, and the more uniform the correspondence between the two the more complete is the verification, and the greater the confidence inspired by the law- It is a principle of logic that from objects oi experience other objects of experience may be inferred, but not existences that could not be experienced at all. Can any empirical verification be provided for God? God belongs to the realm of the Absolute, with which science does not coquet. Science is confined wholly to the realm of relativity and contingence. Soienoe accepts only that as real which oan be tested by the criterion of universal experience. Sclenoe does not pretend to find solutions lor enigmas born ol a mystic mentality. That is why the Sastras, which are the only guide to the Brahmam surpassing all reasoning, tell us that "God is not known by inference, but only by those on whom he bestows his grace, even a particle ol it." why the Supreme Being Vishnu is pleased only by the worship of those that do the duties prescribed by their castes. That is why, when reason is suppressed and bhakti is attained, the jiva " is joined unto Brahmam as one spirit enjoying

His blisB for ever."

To err is a characteristic of the imperfect man; to do nothing would be immaculate conduct. To attribute this imperfection to original sin is hideous. Man is not evil bynature. No external master has taught man his moral duties, his rules of life. The experience of lite has revealed them to him, has rather imposed them ou his will than made them known to his intellect. This truth must be obvious even to those who believe in a revelation. For, no such revelation would be understood, if the mind of man were a complete stranger to the ideas put forward by the revelation, and it would be specially powerless to impose on man a rule of life entirely unrelated to the needs of his life, or to attract him towards an ideal which is not in harmony with aspirations already working in him. If the individual does have external masters, they can be only human beings, for the human race can apprehend nothing except through itself and its own experience in the moral sphere as in the domain of science.But this morality, which has originated spontaneously in relation to the conditions of existence and social lite in particular, is not so much a product of intelligence, of refieotion, as the result of an instinctive adaptation. When man begins to examine himself and reflect on what has been achieved by him, he finds this spontaneous morality already present in him in the form of a conscience. He further finds it outwardly sanctified by the rules and traditions of a social order which he can not eschew. Though often treated as an absolute and infallible judge of right and wrong, this conscience is only the complex result of hunnan progress and civilization. Far from being a great educator, it is itself the product of many influences. A child, could it grow up alone in a wilderness, would be whWly devoid of a conscience. Domesticated animals such as dogs and horses, knowing precisely what is expected of them, exhibit unquestionable traces of a conscience, which is the result of the training to which they have been subjected. The principal and precise purpose of all discipline and training is to create, by the formation and development of a conscience, a perfectaccord between one's ethical ideal and actual life. Variable according to the stage of culture of mankind, at a given moment one's conscience is truly the inspirer of ones conduct, provided that it has already been formed. The discord between one's actual life and one's ideal as represented by his conscience is the feeling of sinfulness. It is a vulgar idea that the right ia a settled something to which every one has to adjust his opinions and aations. History and anthropology show that it is capable of any expansion, proclaiming its own prerogative to exist, even by making a stand against the whole world. The perfect accord between ethical knowledge and will is the subjective criterion of all moral life, while the advancement ot mankind forms tha objective test.

Every system of morality is a body of imperfect social generalizations, expressed in emotional terms. To get at its truth it is useful to omit the emotion and ask ourselves what those generalizations are. We then find that moral ideas have nothing to do with the belief in supernatural beings or with the faith in a future life. It is ridiculous to say that man avoids vice and praosises virtue, is truthful, merciful, loving and kind for fear of an invisible police. Supernatural beings being only creations of human fancy, they can be endowed only with such qualities as man already possesses. The moral character of supernatural beings can not bat vary with the ethical standa.rd3 of their worshippers. Men have attributed to their gods everything that is a shame and reproach among men-theft, adultery, and mutual deception. Aa man advances to higher stages of morality, his earlier conceptions of gods no longer satisfy him, and they are reconstructed to meat his new ideals. The history o(religious thought proves this beyond do ibt. Nor is the belief in immortaUty helpful to the moral life. As already shown, there is no evidanca for the existence ot a -oul and its postmortem psychic activity. Setting tha q lestion, of the existence of the soul aside, history sho ws t.i it che greitest iniquities are possible in conjunction with tha fear of hell. History further shows that too much thought about the future life has destroyed enthusiasm for the eirichment of the present life. He who balievas that the immortality of the individual soul secures for his conscious self an eternity of existence, and that this earthly life is merely a brief prelude thereto, having no other value than being a period of test for the future life, will prefer a cloistered life of prayer or pioas mehtatioQ to a strenuous endeavour to live the largest and fullest life, which will help the onward progress of maukiud. Tue horror at the thought of personal extinction is the natural expression of the deeply-rooted physical will to live so chairacteristio of every living being. Belief in personal immortality is merely an illusion born of the natural instinct for the preservation of life. But illusions, threats, hypothetical promises oan not be of much avail in the development of a moral personality. Only by facing facts will man gain strength to live a full and worthy life without need of a reward in a future life.

It is of the essence of moral duty that it should be imposed by the nature of man, which sets before him the ideal of a perfect life. The actual needs of man and the realities of life are enough to foster a moral nature. Man desires always to get rid of suffering and sorrow and enjoy bliss. Man's nature is such that he can not live in a state of isolation. Man has always been a gregarious being. Only by sharing the society of his fellows the animal man has become a human being. The social impulse belongs to the very fundamental impulses cf man. The social impulse leads to reciprocal activity, to mutual influence, to mutual giving and receiving, to mutual suffering and enjoying. No man can realise all his desires without the help of others. It is by life in common.that man has been able to achieve that wonderful work, called science, whose applications are so indispensable to individual life. Science is the means by which he gets rid of his Sufferings and sorrows. The perfection of science is the common aim of all mankind. But this can be achieved only in a moral atmosphere, which suppresses the lower elements in man and prevents the prostitution of science to hia own destruction. "Science is neither the up-builder nor the destroyer. It is the docile slave of its human masters. It will appear as the one or the other, according as the moral outlook of the latter is derived'from a ra*gressive and deepening Berspcf responsibility, awakened bj^he realization of the true position, which man occupies with regard to the external realities of nature, or an impossible compromise between this and the old mystic mythologies." Without morality happiness is impossible. If happiness is the end of each individual,-One can not attain it except by striving to make others happy, by raising them to that ideal of humanity which he has found for himself. The highest aim of society is the happiness of all its members by the creation in them of a feeling of onesesB and not of disparateness as caste does.

The baser emotions, such as anger, hatred, fear, jealousy, spring from the need of food and the individual interests connected with reproduction. Attention to these tends to perpetuate the restrictions of self or separate individual existence.

On the other hand all human virtues, which draw the attention away from the restrictions of self.tead towards expansion. Broadly speaking the highest morality consists in doing everything for some one else in preference to one's self. The superior man is not the man, whose sole and exclusive aim ia his ego and its welfare, nor the man of power, nor the selfseeker ot domineering will, but the man with a broad comprehensive mind and a great compassionate heart. Justice is often described as the greatest gift of man. Nothing can be farther from the truth than this. Justice is a disrupting quality, while man has progressed by union and self-sacrifice. An eye for an eye, a tooth tor a tooth, blood for blood, measure for measure: this is what justice demands. Sumnium jus, Justice demands punishment for wrong, and summa injuria. respect and protection for the rights of others as well as one's own by lawful means. Justice requires us to do unco othera, as we wish they should do unto us. The bandage over the eyes of the representation of justice symbolises its mechanical character.' That justice is not final is proved by every sovereign power reserving to itself the right of pardon progress needs some sacrifice on the part of those who benefit by mere justice. While justice is concerned with man as he is at present, magnanimity directs its eye to the future man. Magnanimity requires us to resign claims to which we are legally entitled, so that the advancement of our interests may not cause relatively greater damage to those of others question of justice never enters into the discussion of human affairs, except where the pressure of necessity is equal; the powerful exact what they can, and the weak grant what they must. Tho joy of magnanimity consists in giving mora than one can receive, x'^ature is full of disharmonies, and society ia the anonymous author of many existing miseries, so that it is but right that society should repair the consequencas of its imperfections and its past iniquities. Not only are the murderer, the thief, the tier, the adulterer, and the drimkird responsible to society, bat society is equally responsible for breeding such characters, A perfect social system would apportion everybody's advantages and burdens exactly according to what he needed for the function suitable to him magnanious man makes himself the voluntary instr.iment of this'social justice' by accepting some personal sul sacrifice for removing evils for which he is not personally responsible. .It a the highest aim of moral training to call forth that energetic manliness and stern nobility, -which requires no compensation in the way of reward, either in heaven or on earth, but finds its highest enjoyment in the consciousness of progress.

Some attempt the worship of self-regarding passions on the ground of evolution. To these the course ot evolution is a struggle, and those that fight moqt successfully and survive in the struggle are the fittest. This view of evolution has gained plausibility from the fact that the uncivilized races have often been exterminated by the civilized. But it does not ask why we prefer the exterminators to the exterminated. It is not because of the fulfilment of any law of evolution, but because the exterminators possess all those goods, which are summed up in the word civilization. Now civilization implies the avoidance of waste of energy and the economising of labour. This is no other than the mastery of the forces of nature so as to make them serve man's instinctive cravings. This has been achieved by the freest co-operation. Man, though nearly always engaged in a desperate struggle with his environment Siud often fighting with his fellows, is a social being, who has long since IcHrned that co-operation and organization are as essential to human welfare, as are struggle, rivalry, and competition. Ever since his first appearance man has never lived in isolation, but in groups, such as families, hordes, clans, village communities, cities, states; nations, confederacies, etc., within which the practice of mutual aid or oo operation, has largely supplanted, or at least modified, the habit of struggle or rivalry. Civilization is therefore not the result of ferocity, Btruggle and competition but of mutual aid and utility, if civilizations have fallen and perished, they have done so through slavery, serfdom, greed, rivalry, conquest, immorality and idleness. The decay and death of civihzations have everywhere been the result of the combination of the dominant rubng families and their subsequent struggles for power. It is indeed true that the struggle for existence has played a part in the intellectual and ethical development of man. But this very development has made bim see that the mere struggle for existence is a hindrance to the evolution of his intelligence and might over nature. Political Wstory confirms this. All political history is nothing more than the effort of an increasing number of individuals, who, seeing advantages in organization, endeavour to modify the social structure so that these benefits may be increased, not only for a ruler or a privileged class, but for all participating in the organization. I

struggle is the condition of progress in the living world, there can be none without mutuality and the co ordination of forces.

The denial of soul and God does not imply the denial of all religion. Eeligion is born of the feeling of dependence on unknown factors in man's endeavour towards self-preservation, and includes all attempts to get over that feeling of dependence. In the shaping of these attempts imagination, emotion, and ignorance have played a dominant part, and the results are magic, sacrifices, and superstition. One such attempt is the invention of some unseen higher power or powers that can help man in shaping his destiny. To the primitive mind this power is a being to be prayed to for material help. At a later stage of culture when man feels his moral failure, this being becomes a means of escaping from sina and entering on a better course of life. At a still higher stage this power becomes a contrivance for securing the observance of moral rules. Having invoked, God to save him from his troubles and trammels, man finds himseli: in the clutches of a new tyrant with whom he has to make terms. God has become the great mystery, awfully weighing on the mind of man. But the essence of religion is not God, but a larger, more satisfying life. Eife, more life, is the end of life. Eeligion is essentially a plan of action to realize mans hope of a life tree from suffering and sorrow. Even in Christian oountritis the leaders of thought and some of the rank and file overtly disavow their acceptance of the traditional belief in a divine father, who directly ccmm..aicates with man. Slavery, feudalism, theocracy, autocracy are always a-sooiated theism. Theism has become logically impossible. Theological efforts at reconstruction of theism the guise ol immanence are a proof of the failure of theism and the necessity to keep in check pantheistic intrusions Pantheism is vigorously pushing its way in modern religious life in the form of Vedanta, Theosophy, Christian Science, New Thought, and so forth. Mysticism seems to exert a fascinating and soporific influence on certain minds. Pantheism views the vilest actions as well as the worst passions as the manifaststions of the oue Absolute Being, the Great All, or the Infinite Life. Of this Absolute Being nothing can be said except that "it is not this, not that." All substantial monisms land us in "nothi ig', which passes into "being "through "becoming". Pantheism makes

man a puppet and God the puppet master (sutradhar). By utter disregard of speculative consistency and the most flagrant contradictions some forms of pantheism attempt to escape its immoral consequences. Between pantheism and materialism there is no essential difference; matter or aether, possessing the potency of life and thought, does not differ in essence from the pantheistic Brahmam. Pantheism and materialism are but different aspects, and the passage from the one to the other is easy, and takes place according as the poetical or practical sentiment Is predominant. Hegelian pantheism passed easily into Feuerbach's materialism. The Great All of Pantheism has passed in Positivism into the Grand Etre, a poetical personification of humanity as a growing, self-perfecting organism of moral units. Positivism revolts against God-worship, but substitutes in its place man-worship. The latter is as vapid as the former. Man, as he is, swayed by sensuality, unreason, strange stupidities, mighty passions. devastating fears and hates, call forth pity but not worship. A philosophy of some sort is necessary to every individual. An intelligent evaluation of circumstances and the adoption ol a deliberate attitude towards them is absolutely necessary for every man. Every one is aiming at salvation and mental peace. Hence there is no phase of culture without religion in its right sense. Humanity is a part of the blind energy immanent in the universe. By virtue of this energy manifested in his will and intelligence, man is progressing onward by the indomitable promptings of hia own nature. The human will is a will to live, to remove obstacles, to solve riddies, to extend horizons, to enrich this life The ideal of aRceticism represents hnman effort as essentially a sacrifice of one part of man's nature to another to live in the latter more completely, but the ideal of culture is a perfectly developed personality, which can be evolved only by the harmonious development of all parts of human nature in just proportion. True emancipation oan come only by abandoning the struggle for private happiness and devoting oneself to a larger life and wider interests. What is wanted is not worship but servie in the evolution of a superior humanity, which shall be guided by reason, vivacity of intelligence, grace of culture, high and disinteresteel motives of action, and generous enthusiasm. "Eeligion does not brood over a future life, is intensely occupied with the present; it does

surmise something behind nature, **but** contemplates nature-itself; it does not shrink from political organization, but **is** itself the soul of all healthy political organization; **it** does **not** damp enjoyment, but is itself the principle of all rich enjoyment; it **is** not self-conscious or self-absorbed, and does **not** make **us** anxious about our **own** fate, but **is** the principle which destroys self **and** gives **us** strength to rise above personal anxieties."

All progress in religion consists in a reconciliation between religion and science. Is any such reconciliation possible **between** science and Brahminism, or Hinduism, as it is usually called? Hinduism adopts and adapts foreign ideas, so long as they are not antagonistic to the system of castes, the revelatory character of the Vedas. and the belief in a soul. The oaste system is the chief strength and the basic principle (wttZa wa?i.<ra) of Hinduism. Caste is a necessarj- adjunct to one born as a Hindu, which can not be helped whether it be advantageous or inconvenient. By renouncing caste a Hindu becomes a Mleccha. As the Brahmin author of the *Hindu Dharma Tatva* says, "it is by means of caste distinctions that in the Bharatakhanda the Hindu religion has been so well preserved. These caste distinctions are the chief support of the Hindu religion; when they give way, there oan be no doubt that the Hindu religion will sink to destruction." Hinduism is a religion of ac/iar<i. and uou dependent on the beliefs one holds. These usages and ceremonies rest on the authority of sruti and smriti, that is ou the Vedas and the Sastras. ^c^jara is the chief basis of modern Hindu society, and achara is the deliberate disavowal of the liberty of thought and action. Says Krishna to Arjuna in the Gita: "He who abandons the dictates of the Sastras and acts according to his own sweet will, does not get the right fruits of his action, attaineth neither happiness nor the highest good. Wherefore. Arjuna. thy authority is Sasfera in determining what is fit and unfit to be done, thou shouldst perform those works which are declared by the commandments of the Sastras." One may know a certain thing to be black, but one must regard it as white, if srfjii says so. The Hindu regards the bone and ordure of animals as unlean, but he takes conohshells and cow-dung as pure, because sruti says so. Birth confers on the Brahmin the prerogative of interpreting the Sastras, and he claims to be the depository of truths inaccesibleto reason. Ecclesiaticism prevents reason from making -claims to tlie preserve of revelation, and endeavours to lay reason to sleep. Experience and reason are the only instruments of science. Hinduism regards the Veda as a revelation, which one must follow like "one who, without possessing the sense of sight himself, has to depend upon that of another." The attitude of Brahminism towards the teachings of science is clearly illustrated by the position taken by the orthodox astronomer Brahmagupta in relation to the right explanation of solar and lunar eclipses. In the first chapter of his BrahmasidJkanta, he writes: people think that the eclipse is not caused by the Head (Eahuj. This, however, is a foolish idea; for he is in fact who eclipses, and the generality of inhabitants of the world say that it is the Head who eclipses. The Veda, which is the word of God from the mouth of Brahma, says that the Head eclipses, likewise the book Sniriti, composed by Manu, and the <Sa?tt/a<i7., composed by Garga, the son of Brahma. On the contrary, Varahimihira, Srisena, Aryabhata, Vishnuohandra maintain that the eclipse is not caused by the Head, but by the moon and the shadow of the earth, in direct opposition to. and from enmity against, the just mentioned dogma. Eor, if the Head does not cause the eclipse, all the usages of the Brahmins, which they follow at the time of an eclipse, such as rubbing themselves with warm oil and bathing and then performing certain prescribed rites, would be illusory and not e rewarded by heavenly bliss. If a man declares these things to be illusory, he stands outside the generally acknowledged dogma, which is not permitted. Manu says: 'Whan the Head (Rahu) keeps the sun or mpon in eclipse, all waters on earth bacomo pure, and in purity like the water of the Ganges.' The Veda says: "The Head is a son of a woman of the Daityas, called Sainaka." Hence people practise the wellknown works of piety, and therefore fose authors must cease to oppose the generality, for everything, which is in the Veda, Smriti, and Samhita, is true." Can the Brahmin bid farewell to bis cherished beliefs and practices, such as wpapravara. agnihotra, saptapadi, gotra, sattdhya, tarpana, sraddhCi and so forth and still retain his Brahminism? The scientifio attitude of mind refuses to have regard for our hopes aud fears, loves and hates, desires, tastes and interests, in short, our whole subjective emotional lite, in understanding the world. Any reconciliation betweea Brah-:ininism and science could be effected only by an mgenioua

and methodical cheating, which would only degrade **the people who** tolerated **it**. "We **can** not gather grapes of thorns, **nor** pluck figs out of thistles. Till the teachings of science take the place of speculative opinions, social progress can **be** neither certain nor swift. Science **is** the great instrument of social change, all the greater because its object is not change but knowledge. What is injurious to the intellect can not be beneficial to the moral life. He, who loses confidence in intellectual certitude, loses at the same time hisconfidence in moral certitude. If the standard is not truth but the expedient and the reputable, sincerity must yield place to hypocrisy. No wonder that hypocrisy has made men's minds **the** fanes of many an outworn worship. The truo view of the Universe alone can give man freedom.

Progress comprises all those healthy, beneficial tendencies and movements that make for a better society. It is force ot habit that makes people blind to waste and tyranny. The Welfgi'Schicta has many paths. Eevolution is as much a path of progress as evolution. The universal urge for progress may manifest itself in either way. Eevolution may confer blessings which evolution may take a long time to give. country is deluged with flood and there is no fixed course for a boat to take, it goes faster to its destination by following an undefined course than it would do by taking the zig zag course of a well-defined river in the dry season." History shows that only revolutions have given the masses the chances of cultural progress. Nothing ia gained hy bemoan-ing the loss of historic continuity. Historic continuity may represent either progress or regress. Appeals to past glory, picturesque historicity, and so-called civilization may tickle people's vanity, but will serve only to hinder onward progress. Every step of progress involves the repudiation ot old institutions and obligations, A clean sweep and forgetting of the past may sometimes be as beneficial as remembrance of the past and taking pride therein. Conformity to dead views and usages can only scatter one's force and blur one's character. Those that aim at progress can not help cutting themselves adrift from such doctrines and institutions as stand in the way ot progress. The two pillars ot the old class system of Germany were the reserve ofliier and the oflScial with academic training. A line of demarcation completely separated the world of these from the world below, which nobody overstepped- The democratic revolution did away with these. To attain national unity the Japanese discarded their caste system, and removed all sources of social cleavage. The Samurai, who were at one end of the ladder, gave up their long standing privivileges, and the disabilities of the Eta, who, like the Pariahs, were looked upon as defiled, were removed. • Progress implies individual freedom and liberty, and these establish the right of every one to seek one's mate where one will. Without some intermixture of blood there emerges no feeling of solidarity. A civilized government ought to enact such laws as shall afford the freest social opportunity without barriers of colour, class, or race. Unfortunately governments have a tendency to ally themselves with eoclesiasticism, as it is advantageous to them to prevent people from thinking about the foundations of society. We are told that the caste system is the outcome of a tolerance of racial differences. A tolerance of racial differences can be achieved only by the wiUingness to treat all human beings as participating in a com-mon human destiny. The aim of progress is soUdarity. On the other [hand, caste breeds repulsion and opposition. The division between caste and caste is so sharp that only by the aid ot adventitious interests, interests determined by tradition and religion, is community maintained. A fictitious unity is maintained at the expense of the intrinsic interests of the community. Progress is possible only by the transformation of like interests into common interests, and the exclusiveness of caste bars the way. The divisions of oaste would destroy community, were it not that extrinsic common interests, traditional and religious, prove substitutes for those intrinsic common interests, which oaste system rejects. As F. H. Giddings points out, the original and elementary fact in society is the conscionsness of kind. It is about the consciousness of kind, as a determining principle, that all other motives organize themselves in the evolution of social choice, social volition, or social policy. Our conduct towards those whom we feel to be most like ourselves, is instinctively and rationally different from our conduct towards others, whom we beUeve to be less like ourselves. The spirit of caste stands in the way of tho spontaneous recognition of fellowship, a consciousness of kind.

The spirit of nationality is **no** better than the spirit of oaste. Nationality has sentiment, pride, and fanaticism for its basis, and is found on analysis to Be no more than imaginary justitioation of the will to power and poaseasion. National-

ism is the camouflage by which hooliganism masks its true nature. Intense nationalism tends to blind fanaticism and destroys the consciousness of brotherhood of man towards man. A world made up of separate nations means a world of states with separte interests, which bring about rivalry and militarism. If one must learn to subordinate one's own good to that of others, there oan be no valid ground for stopping short of the whole human race. All talk of diversity in the destiny of nations is mere caut. The real problem for all nations is the preparation of men for noble ends. " Truth is the same for all nations, but each nation has its own lies, which it speaks of as its idealism." Science and trade are practically proving that mankind is one great commonwealth. Only the impersonal cosmic outlook of science will bring about real emancipation. A noble humanity can be produced only through personal individual development, the increase of knowlet^e, and the sense of responsibility enabling men to act in accordance therewith. They speak of the reconstitution of our life, economic, social and educational, on the basis of a spiritual communism. We know not what this spiritual communism may be, but we know that science is an actual and practical communism. Common ownership of all its acquisitions is the very breath of its life. Individualism or nationalism of any kind is antagonistic to the fertility and growth of science. Resting on the blind belief in soul, its I^arma, and its transmigration, caste can never bring about that social development which is the necessary condition for the growth of science. Caste makes it impossible to understand and estimate the claims of others in comparison with our own and to enter into relations with an ever widening community. Hindu spiritually is the index of an early stage of conscious lite, which is lacking in all those qualities which make for social development, The inevitable result of Hindu spirituality is the galling yoke oi inferiority trampling a large portion of mankind. Only by discarding caste and all doctrines that give it succour will such mingling be possible as will create good fellowship and complete equality. Progress consists not in the trappings of glittering mechanism, nor in high buildings and long streets, but in the breaking down of barriers, in the release of individuality, in the enrichment of personality, in the widening of community. The ideal of progress is the completest possible harmony of all men, all interests, and all communities.

The belief in a soul, surviving tha death of the body

and living an eternity of existence, is in perfect discord with the scientific conception of the universe. No rational mind can be duped by the savage theory of the transmigration of souls masquerading under the flowing drapery of retributive justice. The doctrine that man's certain life here and now is but a prelude to a hypothetical future existence has led men to look upon actual human life as a means aud not as an end in itself. It has minimised the dignity and importance of the present life in comparison with life in a world beyond, and thus led men to believe that it is a matter of spiritual indifference whether the earthly life, forming a short stretch- of road leading to heaven, is rough and stony, dark and narrow, or broad, bright with sunshine, and carpeted with flowers. No wonder that this religious doctrine.conseiously and logically developed, has led to a social hierarchy, which ignores the claims of the majority of men to live a large and true life. In this wrong ideal lies the root of our backwardness in bringing the antithesis between the material and the spiritual is the fundamental error which is doing incalculable mischief to mankind, immeasurably retarding human progress. When men shall recognise the unity of ail that is, the inter-relation and inter-dependence of tha material and the psychical, they will make mighty strides in the advancement of human welfare. In proportion as man recognises that the fundamental principles in accordance with which hia own nature develops, which his own mental processes reflect, regulate also the transformations of the whole universe, organic and inorganic, in that measure does bis intellectual horizon expand. Just aa the recognition of our community of nature with that which is'extornal to and beyond our individual selves increases our wisdom, so does the recognition of the corresponding community of interest develop our morality. The more perfectly we come to recognise that of which we are a part is not merely a household, a family, a class, a district, or a country, but all mankind, not to speak of the whole universe, the more sucoesaful shall we be in living, beautiful, happy lives.

Printed at the "Vavilla" Press, Madras—1922.